

A  
TRUE HISTO-  
RIE OF THE ME-  
MORABLE SIEGE OF  
*Ostend*, and what passed on either  
side, from the beginning of the Siege,  
*unto the yeelding up of*  
the Towne.

Conteining the Assaults, Alarums, Defences, Inventions  
of warre, Mines, Counter-mines and Retrenchments,  
Combats of Gallies, and Sea-fights, with the portrait  
of the Towne : And also what passed in the Ile of  
*Cadfant*, and at the siege of *Sluice*, after the comming  
of Count *Maurice*.

*Translated out of French into English,*  
By Edward Grimeston.



AT LONDON  
Printed for Edward Blount.

1604.



THE HISTORY OF

THE REIGN OF

CHARLES THE FIRST

BY JOHN BURNET

OF THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD

IN TWO VOLUMES

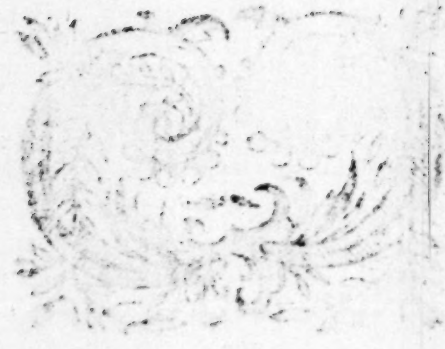
LONDON

Printed by J. Streater, in Strand

1679

By Authority

W. B. 1679



Printed for Edward Blount

1679

To the right Honourable the Earle  
of Deuonshire, Lord Lieutenant of  
Ireland, and one of his Maiesties most  
Honourable priuie Councell.

Charles Mountioie

*Anagramma*

One: A most Rich Iuel.



Our good Lordship knowes, that in no times of  
Peace, Peace is so fixed, but the varietie to  
which all things worldly are subiect, may giue  
necessary, and undelayd occasion to the Theorie  
of warres, if not their practise; if neither, yet  
the knowledge of both, being by long and re-  
nowned experience so substantially turnd into  
the powers of your minde; the unequall subiect of this resolute and  
deadly siege, cannot but adde one welcome forme to your discourse,  
and finde some of your emptiest minutes fit to vouchsafe it accep-  
tance. The bloodlesse and quiet transformation it receiues from my  
tributorie labours; wanting so much life of the death and actuall  
excitations it naturally presented, I know must want as much of the  
Honor and fire it should confer to the Protection and spirit of a Soul-  
dier: but I know withall, the lost liues of so many resolute and Ho-  
norable Commanders, hauing a little restitution made them in this  
willing remembrance, will finde no lesse cherishing and strength of  
propagation in your lining disposition: to whose true Nobilitie and  
generally lou'd vertues, I thrice humbly submit these and  
whatsoeuer worthier causes of your graue con-  
sideration the unworthy worke  
compriseth.

Your Lordships alwayes to  
be commanded,

Edw: Grimeston.



## The Author to the Reader.



His latter age hath brought forth memorable exploits of war: & *Flāders* (without straining from our subiect) to her losse, hath not scene the least, being vexed with continuall troubles since the yeere 1566. The sieges of *Haxlem*, *Mastricke*, *Andwerp*, and other townes, haue beene goodly, according vnto the Etimology which some giue vnto the word. *Bellum*, quod *minime bellum*, and it seemes that the industry of men instructed by the inuentions of former ages, and prickt forward by religion, and other violent causes and coulours, hath added what she could, and as it were made the vttermoſt triall of her forces. I leaue it vnto the reader to make a comparison betwixt this siege of *Ostend*, and the rest, but without doubt it exceeds them all in length of time: the importance therof cannot be told, being the most memorable occurrant of our age. The opinion I haue that this small worke (recommended by truth it selfe, and as free from passion, as void of affectation) should be pleasing vnto many, is the cause I haue set it forth, to represent (as in a table) the most remarkable things that haue happened on either side at this siege. Many being interested in the cause (as they say) will desire to see it, and spirits prickt forward by curiosity would not loose their partes. In the yeere 1599. the Flemings being molested with the continuall courses of them of *Ostend*, caused certaine forts to be made about the towne, to bridle them. It is about three yeeres since this siege begā, which was the first of Iuly in the yeere 1601. we may thinke that the importance of the place, hath (during this time) furnished both the one & the other withal deuises possible, for the well assaying & defending of the Towne. The discourse which is brieſe, frees me from giuing any censure: and the Law which I haue prescribed my selfe, opposeth: Some not vnproperly, call *Ostend* an *Academie* and an excellent Schoole, for *Gouernours*, *Captaines*, *Souldiers*, *Ingeneurs*, *Phisitions*, *Surgions*, *Pilots* and *Mariners*: and they finde it by experience, that e- uery one of these persons which hath continued but three mo-  
neths



*The Author to the Reader.*

neths in *Ostend*, is become excellent in his art and vocation. A Souldier when he comes forth speakes like a Maister in fortifications, of Ramperes, Bulworkes, Spurres, Counterscarfes, Rauelins, Traueries, Parapets, halfe Moones, Reduites or Blocke houses and such like, I will alledge one example among many, to shew the valour of the Souldiers of *Ostend*: In the yeere 1603. the Arch-dukes men hauing surprized the Castel of *Wastendonck*, the inhabitants resolved to retrench themselves against it, setting their Garison to worke, who were schollers newly from this *Academie*, these good workmen made prooffe in three houres what they could doe, to the great amazement of the Spaniardes, who said they could not be men, seeing the Canon did not force them to retire a foote, or els that euery one had a new life in his cofers. As for Phisitions and Surgians, Mounsieur *Moerbeke* of *Haigh*, is held for a *Phoenix*, *Alexander Courtmans* of *Andwerp* is very famous, & all such as haue practised in *Ostend*, haue purchased a prerogatiue aboue the rest. The like is of all men that haue bin imployed there, finally this little booke is good for Souldiers, who shall learne therein many excellent points of their profession, tried at the cost of other men, and ready to be put in practise: neither shall it be vnprofitable to any, seeing that we liue in this peruerse age towards the dissolution of the world threatned of all sides with wars, like vnto a poore trauelier, which sees the Heauen ouercast threatning a storme in the midst of a plaine Champion. As for delight: If any one seeke to please his taste, the variety of the discourse will minister sufficient matter: My intention in writing these simple remembrances, free from all other affection, was onely to serue the publike: If my labour may be as friendly accepted, & be pleasing to all good men, & to those whose iudgements are not obscured nor transported with passion, neither that haue coniured against the truth: I haue attained to my desire, and thinke my paines well imployed. Farewell,

A. V.



# A description, and the names of the Forts of the Towne of Ostend.

1. Sand-hill.
2. False-bray.
3. Schottenbruch or the Scottish fort.
4. Becc-af, here was the Church of the olde Towne, whereof the steeple onely stands.
5. The menteur or liar.
6. The new haven, the which is not yet finished.
7. Moises table.
- 8.9. Flamenburch, upon the West of the new Haven where they haue planted a Batterie to shoote against the Arch-dukes men, when as they go to their battery which is towardes the Saulecisses.
10. The Bulworke upon the Northwest with a Blockhouse, upon the Haven, by the which the ships doe now enter.
11. The North Bulworke, with a battery thereon.
12. The East gate.
13. The Ruelin at the East gate.
14. The Bulworke of Pekell.
15. A Batterie upon the Bulworke of Pikel, in the which there are 9. demie Culuerins, to shoote at the Arch-dukes approaches which he makes upon the new Haven.
16. Batterie upon the Counter-scarfe before the colke or gulfe.
17. The Bulworke of Spaine.
18. A gate with a bridge at the Bulworke of Spaine to go up into the Countrie.
19. A passage through the Counter-scarfe, by the which they gain to the colke or gulfe.
20. The East Ruelin.
21. The Spanish halfe Moone, fortified without with a corredor or gallery.
22. Becc-af, or the follie of the East.
23. The halfe Moone of Slimmer.
24. A Blockhouse abandoned.
25. A halfe Moone in the high Country.
26. A Bulworke upon the South-East.

37. *A Ravelin upon the South-East.*
28. *A point against the South-square.*
29. *A Bulworke upon the South,*
30. *A Ravelin upon the South.*
31. *The South Ravelin hath beene cutt off in this place to stop the enemies approach there.*
32. *A halfe Moone in the ditch of the Counter-scarfe.*
33. *Little squares called claptmus at the end of the halfe Moone upon the Polder.*
34. *The bridge of the South-west Bulworke to goe over the Counter-scarfe into the Polder.*
35. *The South-west Bulworke.*
36. *The halfe Moone of the Polder.*
37. *The South-west Ravelin.*
38. *A gate at the South-west of the Towne.*
39. *The West Bulworke.*
40. *The West Ravelin.*
41. *The Porke-espike.*
42. *The Helmont.*
43. *The West Haven with the trenches,*
44. *A bridge to goe unto Sand-hill.*
45. *The olde Sluice.*
46. *A bridge to passe into the olde Towne.*
47. *The place where the blue Sluice was.*
48. *Many lodgings whether the souldiers retired.*
49. *Many Blindeg or couerings to receiue the enemies shot which came from their battery upon the West.*



**A description of the Chariot or *Pompees* bridge, inuented  
to giue an assault to the Halfe-Moone of the Spaniards  
at Ostend, as it appears in the plot of the towne.**

- A. The Bridge being let downe.*
- B. The Mast against the which the Bridge was raised, being 150. foote high.*
- C. The upper part of the Bridge, made of great Roapes and Cables of Musket prooffe.*
- D. The neather part of the Bridge made likewise of Roapes of Musket prooffe.*
- E. A Poste like unto the beame of a Wagon, to draw the Bridge vp, and to let it downe.*
- F. Foure-score horses to draw this Chariot.*
- G. Wheelles eight foote broad, and 14. or 15. high, the which are exceeding strong, and did cost 300. Ducats a peece.*
- H. Heere Musketiers should be placed to shoote at them of the Towne, and to keepe them from cutting of the Roape.*

The Arch-duke after he had done what he could to take Ostend, or to annoy the besieged, by the inuention of an Italian Ingeneur named Pompee, he caused a Chariot to be made, or a Bridge called *Helwagen* or *Loywagen*, or *Pompees Chariot*, by the inuentors name, to go unto the assault at the Spanish Halfe-moone, the which was made and held by them of the towne: the Bridge is 100. paces long & 16. broad: on the which ten may march in front, it hath foure Wheelles euery one 8. foote broad, and 14. or 15. high: at the end of the Chariot there is a tree or mast 150. foote high, by meanes whereof the bridge is drawne up and let downe with poollies. Their desseigne was to fasten Anchors on either side of the Halfe-moone, against the which 80. horses should draw the bridge, as it is set downe in the Figure. They of the Towne hauing intelligence thereof, made a high Palyssadoe with trauerses of masts like unto Gibets, to receiue the upper part of the bridge, being let downe: the besieged seeing this bridge approach neere unto the Halfe-moone, they brake one of the Wheelles with a Canon-shot, so as it was of no effect, which made the of the towne call it the Cowards-bridge.

**The**



I  
Description  
on and si-  
tuation of  
Ostend.

are retired to *Camuehr* in *Zeland*, so as there remaines  
not aboue one hundred and fiftie households.

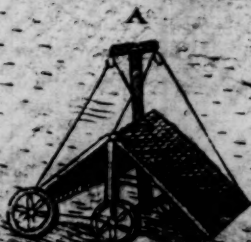
The port whereof we haue spoken, stretcheth to The Port.  
A the





FLAT DRIE

5th Mar.



B

the Spanish half-moon  
22 the Slimmer

the Spanish half-moon

H

the luyser

The Battery of the castle  
of Bruequoy

The Sea Coast

OCEAN





E ANVS GERMANICVS



A description of the Chariot or *Pompees bridge*, inuented  
to giue an assault to the Halfe-Moone of the Spaniards  
at *Ostend*, as it appears in the plot of the towne.

*A. The Bridge being let*

*B.*

*The*



The Historie of the siege of *Ostend*,  
from the beginning unto this  
present day.



*Ostend* is a Sea Towne in the countie of *Flanders*, one of the most famous Forts of Christendome, scituated amongst downes, three miles from *Newport*, and foure houres iourney from *Bruges*, vpon a riuier called *Yperleke*, the which increased by others, casts an arme into the Sea by the west Sluce, the which hath sometimes bin a good Port, but now it is cut of by the enemy by meanes of a Trench, and made altogether vnprofitable by them of *Ostend*, with two dikes or caufies vpon the side of *Polder rampart*, to take away all commoditie and aduantage from the enemy.

Descripti-  
on and Si-  
tuation of  
*Ostend*.

The Towne with the Ramparts about it containe halfe an houres iourney. Before the siege it was reasonably well built. For the situation, the inhabitants maintained themselues with fishing. Before the warres they were about three thousand, but since the greatest part are retired to *Camuehr* in *Zeland*, so as there remaines not aboue one hundred and fiftie households.

The port whereof we haue spoken, stretcheth to The Port.  
A the



the North Norwest of the towne, the greatest depth is towards the Norwest drawing to the sea. It flowes and ebbes euery fixe howers, as in other hauens of *Flanders*, and it remaines almost drie at euery ebbe, neither is it good but at halfe fload, and for vessels which drawe not much water.

A new  
Gollet.

Besides this Port, within these few yeares, the Sea of it selfe hath opened a new gollet or Port, about a hundred foote broade, entring into the land when the tides are lowest, the depth of two Pikes, and before at the entrie a good halfe fadam, growing euery day more deeper, so as it is likely in time to be one of the best ports of *Flanders*. Since the siege they haue made a new Port or Hauen betwixt these two, whereof shall be spoken more at large hereafter.

A new  
Port.

A dis-  
course of  
the estate  
of the  
towne  
since the  
warres and  
fortificati-  
on therof.

The fortification of this place began during the warres of the Lowe-countries, in the yeare 1572. It was first inclosed with gates and Palissadoes against the incursions of the enemy, and fixe yeares after being better fortified by the confederate Prouinces, it hath continued almost alone in all the countie of *Flanders* faithfull to her partie, and hath couragiously withstood all the enemies attempts, and resisted their enterprises. The Duke of *Parma* in the yeare 1583. returning with his victorious troopes from the prise of *Dunkerke* and *Nieuport*, and hauing besieged it, after fūe dayes was forced to raise his siege.

Two yeares after, *La Motte* gouernour of *Graneling*, surprised the olde Towne vpon the Sea-shore, being then onely fortified with a simple rampart and a pallisadoe, thinking to fortifie it speedily, and so to keepe it, but he was chased away with great losse, leauing vpon the



the place aboute fortie men of commaund, with all his munition.

Since it hath beene fortified, and first of all the East-downes, (the which by reason of their height and neer-nesse might much annoy the Towne) haue beene made somewhat plainer, and the Sea besides her ordinarie course brought round about the towne when it flowes, aboute 1200. paces to the South, and at Spring-tides it runnes a league into the countrie towards the West, and causeth much broken land there abouts, especially towards the West Sand-downes, whereas the enemy must campe, and whereas his onely passage lyes to goe vnto the Towne.

The fortification comprehended all the *Palder*, (so <sup>Those of</sup> they call a meadow or field wonne from the sea or ri- <sup>Ostend a mode</sup> uer) but finding it vnfit to be fortified, and requiring a <sup>bandon the</sup> great garde, a part of it was left out. They haue like- <sup>Palder.</sup> wise furnished their ditches with causies and dikes, so as whereas they were wonte to be drie at euery tide, they are now full of water.

The chiefe fortifications haue beene made since the comming of the Arch-duke *Albert* in the yeare 1596. and at the timewhen *Calais* and *Hulst* were taken, and lastly in the yeare 1600. the ramparts were made higher, the Bulwarkes enlarged, and all reduced to a fit and equall proportion. Besides this fortification, those of the towne haue neede to ramper themselves with dikes and causeys against the sea, the which they feare more then the enemy.

This place imports greatly, that it should greatly auaille the Arch-duke, and that the losse thereof should much preiudice the confederate Princes.

Import-  
tance of  
Ostend.



for (omitting to speake of the commodity of the hauien) the Archduke by meanes thereof is forced to entertaine warre in his owne countrey, and to haue a little extraordinary armie continually in pay, to the ruine thereof. *Flanders* particularly, (the which in time of peace was reputed for a third part of the seuentene Prouinces,) is as it were abandoned to the souldier, and before the siege, the greatest part of the champion country to redeeme themselves from spoile and pillage, haue beene forced to paie a tribute or contribution to them of *Ostende*.

Forts built  
about Ost-  
end.

The Flemings feeling this thorne in their foote, to bridle and restraine their ordinarie roades, haue built many forts thereabouts, and placed guardes vpon the approches, especially in the yeare 1599. by the aduice of a corporall fugitiue, who had beene long in garison in the Towne, and knew all their courses.

About the Towne from the West to the East, they reckon 17. forts, the farthest of be, *Niendamme*, *Lesfing*, *Snaskerk*, *Altemburg*, *Plassenthale*, *Stalhille*, *Nieuwegen*, *Nienmunster*, and *Blanckenberg*, in some of them country men do dwell; the neereft be, *Albertus*, *Isabella*, *Grossendurst*, *Claire* or the stone *S. Iohn* with his blockhouse, *Colombie* with his blockhouse and *Bredene*, wherunto hath beene added an eighteenth fort vpon the East downes: *Bredene* is the greatest, in the which there was the last winter a whole regiment in garison. *Isabella* is the strongest and neereft vnto the Towne, the which by meanes of a trench ioynes vnto *Grossendurst*, & both of them are commonly guarded by six ensignes: and so is *Claire* with her blockhouse. In *Albertus* there are two ensignes, and one in *Colombie*: the entertainment of which



of the siege of Ostend.

§

which forts in the beginning did cost the states of *Flanders* ninty thousand Flemish crownes a month, & for all that they could not hinder the descēt of an armie, as experience hath verified: & oftentimes the mutinies of garisons, haue brought no lesse oppression & ruine to the Country then the incursions of the enemy. Which hath beene the cause why they haue often made suite to haue it besieged straightly, among the rest after the taking of *Calais* in the yeare 1596. offering to paie extraordinarily 300000. crownes within three monethes. The Archduke seemed then to be resolute, and receiued a good somme of money, but he did nothing but shew himselfe with his armie before the Towne, and hauing viewed it he sodainely retired.

Expences  
in garding  
these forts.

Cause of  
the siege.

After all this they promised againe vnto the Archduke, ( besides the ordinary contribution of 90000. crownes a month for the entertainment of the forts,) to giue him 600000. crownes, that is a 100000. crownes when hee should bring his armie within view of the Towne. a 100000. crownes when he had planted his Canon against it, a 100000. crownes when hee had made a breach, and the other 300000. crownes when he had taken the Towne, and in trueth they deliuered this summe and more as shall appeare hereafter. They preuailed so in the counsel of the States ( hauing practised the *Brabançons*, ) as a resolutiō was taken according to their desires, (although there were great opposition,) saying there was no reason to hazard an armie at the siege of a place so much to be feared.

Diuersitie  
of opini-  
ons in  
counsell  
vpon the  
siege of  
Ostend.

As for the Archduke he was fully resolved to the siege, for that ( besides the hope he had to carrie the place ) he thought by this meanes to force the confede-



rate Prouinces, to draw their armie from the siege of *Reynberg*, and with this money to pacifie his souldiers, and amongst the rest those of *Isabella* fort, which had beene long time mutined, and had intelligence with them of *Ostend*, the which did much trouble the Flemings.

Ostend  
besieged.

Then followed the scege, the Arch-duke came to *Altemburg*, and the fift of Iuly 1601. he sent *Cont Frederick de Berge* first Marshall of the Campe before *Ostend* with foure regiments of foote, who incamped vpon the East downes, from whence the next day he began to shoote with foure double Canons.

Within the Towne there were 21. Ensignes of diuers regiments, and one of the inhabitants, vnder the command of *La North*, who prouided for their defence most of them sending away their wiues & children, into *Zeland*.

The 6. day *Don Augustine de Mexia* Gouvernour of the Castle of *Andwerp*, came before the Towne with fiae other regiments, who incamped vpon the West very neere the Towne, betwixt the forts of *Albert* & *Isabella*. They of the Towne that day and the three following discharged many a Canon shot at them, and in the end forced them to reire and to lodge vpon the West downes, they say there were aboue 400. hurt men carried to *Neuport*.

The mutines of *Isabella* fort were pacified with promises and faire words, so as they went forth willingly to receiue their paie at *Winoxberge*, to the number of fiae hundred men.

The 10. and 11. of Iuly, the enemy caused the chiefest forces of his campe to passe to the West-downes, leaving



leaving vpon the East about a 1000. men vnder the command of *Monsieur de Guson*, who made a new fort vpon the downes with deepe ditches about it.

The enemy approached daily vpon the West, and fortified himselfe, planting twelue peeces of Canon vpon the plainest of the downes; he made also another battery vpon the Sea side, wherby they tooke from them of the Towne that olde Port or Hauen, so as euer fence they haue vsed the *Nieu-port*, or Chanell which they had made expressely, whereby all great barkes or ships with flat bottomes entred,

The olde hauen cut off by the enemy.

Prince *Maurice* hauing intelligence of the siege of *Ostend*, his excellencie sent presently the ninth of Iuly from the campe Sir *Francis Vere* Generall of the English with twelue companies of his owne nation, & *Colonell Vchtenbruch* with seuen ensignes of lowe Country souldiers and some others, to the number of thirtie foure companies, all which arriued happilie and entered the Towne by the North Port the fifteene of Iuly.

Grave Maurice sends to Ostend.

The besieged expected daily foure thousand English men out of England. The 23. of Iuly there arriued 1500. in red Cassackes, the which were presently deuided among the twelue first companies.

Succours from England.

Generall *Vere* being arriued fortified himselfe presently in a certaine high place without the Towne, where the enemy could not annoy him.

The 13. they made a sally, wherein the Archduke (according to the aduice which came from *Bruges*) lost 600. men. *Don Augustin de Mexia* had a Musket shot in the hand, and a maister of the campe a Spaniard,

A Sallie.



named *Don Ierosme Monroy* was slaine there: they of the Towne lost about thirtie.

The 18. of Iuly Generall *Vere* cast vp earth on the side of the *Polder* towards the West downes, & the enemye did the like right against him. Then he fortified himselfe at *Cowe-bridge*, the which his Excellencie had caused to be broken the yeare before: And the 25. he caused the place to be viewed, and put some Souldiers into it: at the same instant the Arche-dukes men issued forth in great numbers out of their approches and trenches, euery one carrying a Fagot or Bauin vpon his head, & passed on running at the mercie of the Musket shot from the Towne, to make a passage through the marish, and to seaze vpon a high place which lyes betwixt *Cowe-fort* & *Grossendurst*, where in the night they planted three Canons: and there they lost many men.

The 26. of Iuly, the Archdukes men played all day vpon this new fortification, and at night came to the assault in three sundry places, they forced it and chased away them of the Towne, the which was easie to doe being but fortie men.

**A Sallie.**

The 27. of Iuly they within the Towne made a sallie and wonne the enemies trenches, whom they chased euen vnto the Sand-downes: the Canon of the Towne playing in the meane time to great effect vpon the Arche-dukes troupes. A Spanish prisoner said that there were 600. of their men hurt and slaine at this seruice, and amongst others, *Don Diego Idiagues* a Spanish Captaine, sonne vnto the King of *Spaines* Secretarie, was slaine.

The 29. of Iuly the Arch-dukes armie was supplied with, ten Ensignes of new souldiers or Besognes, of the



the new troupes that were come from *Italie*, the same day the tide ouer-flowed all the enemies approaches, euen vnto the West-downes of sand.

The same day the enemye sunck a Barke in the which were 18. men, whereof there were but fixe saued, the which did so amaze the Marriners, as they were driuen to great want in *Ostend*, vntill the comming of *Iohn de Duvenuerde* the Admirall, who tooke so good an order as they might easilie enter by the North-port and the gollet, and discharge their munition, victuales and marchandize in the Dikes towards the East-port, so as they haue abundance of all things since that time.

The 31. of Iuly *Cont Frederick* with a regiment of *Germaines* began to make his trenches round about *La pierre S. Iean*, going on to this new fortification which they had wonne, the which they did couer with a new wing towards the Norwest, and vnited it to their first workes vpon the West-side of the Towne: so as the enemies trenches are continued from the west-downes belowe beyond the Fort of *La pierre S. Iean*. Vpon this wing the enemy hath built a little corps *de garde*, against the which Generall *Vere* made a retrenchment vpon the West of his chiefe rampart, from whence the Soldiers entertained one another with their Musket shot, but it was razed two dayes after.

The enemies trenches.

The same day the *Polder rampart* was put in defence vpon the North-east towards the Towne, and vpon the South-west it was raised in manner of a plat-forme to plant Canon thereon, and fixe double Cannons were brought from *Zeland*, whereof foure were planted vpon *Sand-hill*, and the other two vpon the West Boulwarke, whether most of their ordinance was brought,

B

for



for that they expected some great attempt of the enemy there.

*Don Catris* commanded vpon the West at the Sand-downes, who desired extremely to doe some exploit about the *Porke epicke* along the little *Tummel-dike*, and at the first oportunity when the tide should be gone to cast himselfe by the hauen into the old Towne.]

The 3. of August, the Arch-dukes men made a trench vnder the fort of *S. Claire* on the South side.

The 4. day they aduanced their approches on the same side within Musket shot of the trenche, which Generall *Vere* had made vpon the West side of *Polder*.

The 6. of August, those that were camped vpon the West downes, approached fiftie yardes neerer vnto the Towne.

The 9. they began to shoote from *Cow-fort*, whilest the fortification of *Polder* was a finishing.

2200. Canon shot  
in one day  
against the  
Towne.

The same day the Arch-dukes men shotte 2200. Canon shot from their batterie of the side of *S. Claire's* Forte, without making of any reasonable breach, they onely hurt and slue some poore miserable creatures, and spoiled some priuate houses, but it did nothing counteruaile their great expence of Poulder and shot, neither had they any thing aduanced their principall desseigne.

The defences of Sand-hill Bulwarke, Westers Bulwarke, and *Helmont* were beaten downe, but they were so well repaired in three or foure dayes, as in a whole Moneth the enemy could not much indomage them.

The eleuenth of August, a seruant to Sir *Horatio Vere* Liuetenant generall of the English was slaine, and  
a peece



a peece of the Towne-Towre beaten downe.

The Arch-dukes men stood euery night in armes to the number of three or foure thousand, to receiue them of the Towne, who they thought would fallie out vpon them.

The Arch-dukes men stand vpon their guard

The same day at night came a Fleete of 15. vessels from *Zeland* with munition and victuals, the which were afterwards vnladen in the Towne. The same day a peece of the Tower of the olde Towne was beaten downe, and two prisoners were brought into the Towne, whereof the one was borne at *Bruges*, and the other at *Namur*, who among other things saide that the mutins of *Isabella* fort, had beene drawne forth with good wordes, and were gone to *Winoxberge* about 500. men; moreouer they said that the Archduke had caused all the fugitiues to be put in to prison, for that some of them had bragged to know the meanes how to take the towne, but the smale likelihood there was in their proposition, did shew sufficiently that it was but to winne themselves credit.

Ships from Zeland.

The 12. of August a small Tower of the Gouvernours lodging was beaten quite downe, and although it were pearced through with many a shot, yet did he not abandon it.

Of the Gouvernors lodging, beaten downe with the Canon, and not by him abandoned.

The same day many of the inhabitants both men and women returned out of *Zeland*, who had fled for feare in the beginning of the siege.

The 13. of August, arriued 17. or 18. ships, the which entred into the Towne by the Gollet on the East side about mid-night, vpon whome the enemy plaid fiercely with his Canon, and one boy onely was flaine, this happened because it was moone light, for when the



night or darke they passe safely, without discoverie of the enemy, whose neereſt trenches on that ſide were a thouſand or eleuen hundred paces of.

The enemy did alſo much indamage the ſhips that lay within the Towne, behinde the new Church, and ſlue a Mariner and ſome ſouldiers.

The Archdukes men which where in guard at *Katzen-heubten*, the which is a kinde of Cavalier or platforme, plaied continually with their Muskets into the Towne, they hurt a Sargent of Captaine *Anthones* company in the leg, and ſlue the Sargent of Captaine *Kolue*.

Thoſe of the Towne tooke two peeces of great Cannon, the which were vpon Weſter Boulwarke, and planted them in the falſe Braie at the foote of Sandhill, for that they ſerued them to no uſe whereas they were before, by reaſon that the enemy was come ſo neere the Towne, and had fortified their approaches too well on that ſide.

Fugitives  
taken.

The ſame day, three men thinking to flie vnto the enemy, two of them were taken & put into Yrons; the enemy ſhot with foure peeces, from their neereſt trench on the South ſide, and with others from the Eaſt and Weſt, but their greateſt effect was to ruine ſome houſes: from the firſt beginning vnto this day, they did not hurt aboue 18. perſons of the Towne and ſome ſouldiers, the which was little in regard of the multitude of bullets which paſſed through all partes of the Towne, whereof the greateſt part waied aboue 40. poundes a peece.

Bullets  
of 40.  
pounde  
ſhot into  
the towne.

The 14. of Auguſt, there entred by the Gollet 7. or 8. ſhips laden with munition and victuals: the enemy ceaſed



ceased not to shoote day and night, breaking all the couerings of the houses, the which they complained most of, and sometimes they hurt a Towns-man or a souldier.

The same day, about eight of the clocke in the morning Generall *Vere* was hurt with a peece of a Canon which split, for the which the enemy made great signes of ioy and triumph, discharging many Canon shot, so as they hurt six or eight persons, but not one of them died.

Generall  
vere hurt.

After dinner a Canonier was slaine vpon Sandhill, with a Musket shot in the head, the which came from *Keihenbter*, this was the seuenth Canonier which had beene slaine, besides there were five souldiers strook with one Canon shot in the ships, whereof some dyed, the rest were maimed.

The same day the Towns-men pearced their Counterscarfe, to lodge the ships within their ditches, that they might be more couered.

The 15. there was great shooting on either side, and there were 19. or 20. slaine of those which helpt to vn-lade the ships, from morning to morning, day & night there was nothing hard but the thundering of Canons and hissing of Muskets on either part.

The English men made the greene market place within the Towne hollow, fitting themselues with cabbines and lodgings in the earth, and they made hollow another void place vpon the South-west, yet there were still some of them hurt. Those of the Towne say also that they did often see them drawe dead men out of the enemies trenches, the which their Canon had slaine.



The 16. of August the Arch-dukes men in the night made a halfe Moone at their neereſt reſtrenchment towards the Weſt-downes, and ſo carried it along the Sand-downes, vnto their neereſt approches, the which ſtretch from the Downes vnto the *Polder*, and there made a batterie of three Canons, fiftie yardeſ neerer then they had yet made any, from whence they began at the breake of day to ſhoote againſt the Bulwarke of *Sand-hill*, the which (after they had diſcharged ſome thouſands of ſhot) ſeemed to be a wall of Yron, and they might heare the Bullets ſtrike one againſt another. They made much ſand flie into the ayre, but they could make no reaſonable breache: the Townſ-men prepared to vndermine a little dike which went neere vnto the enemies trenches vpon the Weſt ſide of the Downes.

The Arch-duke cauſed many houſes of Stone to be built in the Fort called *Albertus* by his name, ſeeing that the ſiege in all ſhew would be long.

The Arch-dukes men forced to retire by the tide.

The ſame day the Sea ſwelled ſo high as the approches and defences comming from the Weſt-downes, towards the Towne, yea and thoſe beyond towards the South, were all couered with water, ſo as the Souldiers were forced to recouer the neereſt ſande downes: the water was halfe a league about the Towne from the Eaſt to the Weſt downes. The Engliſh-mens trenches were in like ſort full of water, being forced to ſaue themſelues vpon the higheſt ground. The Towneſ-men likewiſe expected this, beleeuing (as it fell out afterward) that it would make the enemy retire.

The



The 17. of August the Arch-dukes men aduanced their trenches from the West towards the *Porke espike* neerer then they had done, so did they vpon the South towards the trenches of the English, labouring there in such sort as if they would haue planted all their batteries, and lodged themselues as neere in a manner as it was possible. They had about the Towne 50. great peeces of brasse, and by that day they had discharged 35000. Canon shot, and yet could neuer make breach, and those places whereas the enemye ( the tide being gone ) might passe on drie foote were made stronger then before the siege.

35000. canon shot against the towne.

The same day one of the enemies souldiers fled away and came into the Towne, discovering vnto them the enemies estate, and that they prepared to shoote balles of wilde fire into the Towne, hauing a deseigne to assault the West ravelin the which is vnder *Helmont*.

That day the enemye shot arrowes with letters into the English quarter, promising ten stiuers a day to such as would serue him, the which they of the Towne did interpret, as if they had spent all their inuentions & deuises. The tide did rise higher that day then before, and did drowne the plaine countrie a league round about, and did ouerthrowe 40. or 45. yardes of the East dike, which extends to the Northe, from the East Port vnto the olde Towne, the which did more amaze the besieged, then the Arch-dukes power.

Letters shot into towne with arrowes.

The tide amazeth the townes men.

The eightene of August the enemye approached within 20. or 24. yardes of the West ravelin: at night there arriued a flecte of ten or eleuen saile with



souldiers and all sorts of prouision and victuall, coming from *England*, and some from *Zeland*, whereof some barkes entred the Towne by night without any harme.

The 19. of August the Arch-dukes men planted by night two peeces of Canon in their neereſt trenches, the which they of the Towne diſmounted the night following, and brake them in peeces with their Canon.

The ſame day the enemies campe on the Eaſt ſide was fortified with three regiments, the which marched in view of the Towne, with many Wagons and much baggage : ſome ſaid theſe were the troopes which had beene ſent to the releefe of *Berke* vpon the *Rhin*, but without any effect, the *Cont* of *Buckquoy* came with them. This day as the former, the Canon played furioſly on either ſide, and ſome inhabitants and ſouldiers were hurt within the Towne.

The enemy had begun to mine, but this inuention ſucceeded not, they thought the earth was not fitte for it.

They turned a batterie of ſeauen or eight peeces againſt the Weſt ravelin, the which did vſually ſhoote againſt the Sand-hill, finding they had preuailed little : with an artificiall bullet they fiered the commiſſarie of the victuals lodging, the which was couered with ſtrawe, but it was ſoone releued, and the fire quenched.

In the night ſome ſouldiers iſſued forth, who paſſing along the neereſt trenches, ſlue foure ſouldiers of the enemies, and brought away one priſoner, who ſaid that the enemy laboured in a mine whether no man went, for that the Colonell *Don Catris* had made a  
cabin



cabin from whence he neuer departed; right against it in the neereſt trenches to the Towne, and that they had an intent to giue the Towne an alarme vpon the Eaſt, and to giue an aſſault vpon the Weſt part.

The 20. of Auguſt the enemye in the night aduanced fixe yardeſ neerer to the halfe Moone, vnto a certaine dike right againſt the *Porke epike*.

Thoſe of the Towne imagined that the Arch-duke would ioyne all his batteries together vpon his neereſt trenches in the Weſt dikes, without leauing any in the reſt,

The ſame day arriued 2000. Engliſhmen well appointed into the Towne. The beſieged ſhot furiouſly day and night vpon the dike, where the enemyes were lodged to driue them away, fearing that they would mine.

1000. Engliſh come into the Towne.

The 21. day, 50. or 60. ſouldiers made a Sallie out of the Towne vpon the enemye, being lodged vpon this dike, they ſlue ſome, but in the end by reaſon of the great numbers that came to ſuccour them, they were forced to retire.

The ſame day the enemyes diſcharged all their artillarie, they of the Towne ſeeing there-with a great number of men vpon the Downes, thought that the Duke was there in perſon.

The 23. there arriued 50. or 60. ſaile from Zeland, and in them 20. Enſignes of French, Walons, Scottiſh and Friſons.

20. Enſignes of French & other nations.

The 24. of Auguſt they made a Sallie of 700. men, the which retyred without any great exploite.

The 25. ſome ſouldiers which had beene two nights in *Flanders*, returned to the Towne and brought with



Prisoners  
brought  
into the  
Towne.

them three prisoners, whereof the one was a Cheesemonger of *Bruges*, the second a Procter of *Dixmude*, and the third a pesant, whom they had taken vpon the way betwixt *Dixmude* and *Bruges*, who saide there was small store of money in the armie, and that the Marchants of *Bruges* were out of hope to see the Towne taken, the siege whereof had all ready (in their opinions) cost as much as all *Flanders* might bee worth.

The Arch-  
dukes in-  
mention.

They saide also that the Archduke (to defend himselfe against the suddaine sallies of them of the towne) had caused to be laied at the neereft retrenchment, long planks full of great nailes the points vppward, to runne into their feete that should assaile him: And for that it rained that day, there was little shooting on eyther side, but towardes night the whether growing cleere they beganne in good earnest, yet the enemy shott no Bullets aboue nine, ten, or twelue pound waight.

The 26. of August, foure corporals marching with a woman which had a childe in her armes, were all slaine with one shot.

Inuention  
for an as-  
sault.

They of the Towne finding that the enemy approached to come in the end to an assault, prepared (amongest other things to receiue them) a great number of planks, to euery one of which they did fasten twelue Muskets, the which by meanes of an instrument of white Latten with a traine of Poulder should discharge all at once.

The 27. of August, the great Barkes or Shipes of Warre in which there were some Captaines, entered the Gollet with full sailes, the enemy shooting hard, but



but hee hurt no man.

The same day they of *Ostend* did write that having digged and cut a certaine peece of ground neere vnto the halfe Moone vpon the West part, they had made a new Gollet or mouth, so as there is a great Water the which makes a separation betwixt the Towne and the enemy, & takes from them all meanes to come to the assault.

The 28. the Arch-dukes men beganne againe to shoote into the Towne fiery Bullets and flints in their great Canon.

In the night the enemy repaired their trenches and beganne then at the halfe Moone, which had beene abandoned, but they lodged not in the Towne at this time.

The 29. of August, eight hundred men of the troupes of the Lord of *Chastillon* came into the Towne.

The Arch-dukes men raised vp a little plat-forme on the East side of the downes declining towards the South, to plant two or three Canons thereon, (as a prisoner saide) to shoote at the ships that went in and out.

They shotte also furiously at a little sluice which is in the Counterscarfe, along the Porke-espike, so as they of the Towne were resolved to stoppe it vp, but in the end they found the Canon could not hit it being placed so high.

The same day entred into the Towne with their coullors flying, the rest of the souldiers who the 23. day by reason of a tempest were forced to retorne into *Zeland*



*Zeland*: there were three prisoners also brought into the Towne.

There came an aduise from *Callis*, that the enemies began to faint, and yet notwithstanding the Arch-duke kept the Flemings still in hope, and said that he would undermine the Towne, the which is impossible by reason of the Dike we haue spoken of before.

This day an English fugitiue was taken againe and presently hanged. There came also 60. or 70. saile out of *Zeland* laden with munition and victuals.

The 30. day, about 25. of these ships entred by night into the gollet, and without any danger passed into the Towne-ditch. There came also another fleet of 16. or 17. saile laden with munition and victuals.

The enemies had neere vnto their fortifications on the East part foure great barks, from whence a canon shot pierced through one of the Towne Galleis: they would gladly with those haue taken some ship in the Fleet, but they durst not venter them.

The last of August in the night, a Fleet of about 32. saile laden with munition and victuals, entred the Towne without any losse, except one Barke laden with Bauins, the which was shot betwixt winde and water. They may safely harbour two hundred ships in the new Port, which striking their Mastes, cannot be seene nor hurt by the enemye.

One of the enemies campe flying into the Towne, said that the souldiers were not well paid, and yet the Arch-duke was resolute to haue the Towne, whatsoeuer it cost him, and that there were yet about 20000. men in his armie.

An English Captaine who was also Sargent Maior, going



going the round with Colonell *Horatio Vere*, was flaine with a Canon shot.

As for the forme of the siege and Arch-dukes campe it was as followeth.

The forme  
of the siege  
and of the  
Arch-  
dukes  
campe.

The Arch-duke hath made his trenches on the West part towards the Palissadoes of the halfe Moone, the which the water hath since pierced through and ouer-flowne.

There are besides fixe or eight trenches one after another vpon the west-downes some higher then others, all well made with Sande and Fagots, and further into the countrie vpon the side of the West-downes, his trenches stretch vnto *Com-bridge*, the which is aboue 300. yardes, along the which there are diuers Bulwarks planted with Canon: these trenches are betwixt the Towne and the trenches of the English, and the two Fortes called *Grossendurst* and *Isabella*. The South end of his long trenches, ends at the channell which goes to *Grossendurst* and *Isabella*, and from thence to *Bruges*, and so through the countrie.

At the end of these trenches which go frō the South about a 100. yardes towards the West, betwixt *Grossendurst* and the English trenches, they haue built a Forte high and thicke, on the which they haue planted three Canons.

Vpon the Southe neere the channell and causey of *Ippe*, they haue another trenche, the which stretcheth from this channell to the South South-east, and so returns to the East to a large and deepe Marish, which hath beene made by succession of time, and so goes into the Sea: There they haue likewise two or three Canons which play vpon the towne on the South side.



Vpon the South and South-west of this trench they haue another trenche of a 150. yardes long; the which going towards the Fort of *La Pierre*, alongst the which there is a lowe ground, that is sometimes full of water, by the which the boates that bring them victuals must passe.

Iust vpon the West they haue brought great stoare of Sand and bowes, within a stones cast of the ditches and counterscarfe. Vpon the East they haue fortified vpon the downes, and haue made a platforme of sand and Bowes at the foote of the Downes, on the which they haue placed some peeces, the which they haue done vpon the shore to annoy the shippes that went in and out of the gollet or mouth, which peeces were before vpon the downes.

The first of September, a Captaine came to *Middle-bourgh* with five prisoners, to present them to his Excellencie: they said the enemy did not shooe so furiously as he had done, and that the breach neere the halfe Moone was five yardes wide and deepe enough, without any annoyance to the Towne: and yet the enemy had made no meanes to stop it, but had onely gathered together a great quantitie of Bowes, yet by the opinion of the besieged, they might easily haue done it, for that at a lowe water it is not about foure foote deepe. They haue also planted their gabions along their trenches the which is vpon the Sea-side, and goes right against the old Port or Hauē: and for feare that they should be ouerthrowne or carried away with the Sea, they haue tyed them together with strong Cables and chaines of Yron to plant a batterie there of Field-peeces to commaund the North-hauen.

The



The 8. of September a Gentleman of *Don Catris* traine yeelded himselfe into the Towne, whome his maister the day before had struck on the hea in *Alber-tus-forte*, and left for dead: he saide that *Don Catris* (who had the command of the armie) had an intent to giue an assault to the West-rauelin, the which is aboue that breache whereof we haue spoken, with manie engines and Ladders of Yron. It was then our Ladies birth-day, who would not haue beene pleased with so bloudie a sacrifice, and the slaughter of so many men.

But when we shall consider the preparations which they of the Towne had made to receiue them, we can neuer be sufficiently amazed at the enemies blindness, who without any likelyhood of good successe, hazard the poore Souldiers, and leade them without pittie to the slaughter, the which may iustly be called the rage of furious beasts, that runne without all reason or consideration to their deaths, and in steede of victorie reape nothing but dishonour. The vsuall meanes to take a place besieged, hath beene by Mines, Sappe, or Breache, and when that could not preuaile, to cut of their victuals and to famish them, wherein the Spaniards haue yet preuailed nothing.

And to the end the reader may more easily conceiue what the enemy had done to come to the assault, he must ynderstand that he had approached as neere vpon the West side as was possible, else he must winne the halfe Moone, the which is before *Sand-hill*, but betwixt him and it is the Port, the which is sometimes full of water, and sometimes drie, where he must of



force take a counter-scarpe betwixt the halfe Moone and the Bulwarke, or else at a lowe ebbe to assault this Bulwarke, as the assault giuen in Ianuarie following shewed that it was their desseigne: but as it was exceeding difficult, so could it not succeed well. From the beginning of the siege vnto this day the enemy hath still battered this Bulwarke furiously, and there were so many thousands of bullets in it, as some would haue vndertaken to haue made it new for the Bullets: and yet the enemy could not make a breache; the Bulwarke is a little disfigured, so as a man vnarmed and without any opposition might mount vp, but a man armed could not by any meanes, for that it is like vnto a mount of Sand, and very steepie, from whence they should fall rather then aduance a foote: besides they must force seauen Palisadoes, made of great Piles, which are within the Porte, one a Musket shotte from another, all which they must breake before they come to the foote of the Bulwarke, then in the way as they mount there are certaine mines to blowe vp: and in passing the Musketers of the halfe Moone, and of the counterscarpe would so welcome them, as many of them would forget to returne vnto their campe: moreover there are 13. Canons hidden in the counterscarpe and other places, charged with chaines and peeces of Yron to scoure the place: In the meane time the tyde comes, wherevnto they must yeeld or be vtterly lost, the which happened in the like sort at the assault of Ianuary in the yeare 1602. Notwithstanding all these great difficulties, no aduise of the old Captaines, (who had considered of it,) could preuaile against the obstinacie of the States of *Flanders*; who notwithstanding  
all



al this, haue promised 300000. *Flemish* crownes monthly for this siege: & 100000. crownes when the Campe should be lodged before the Towne, a 100000. crownes when the canon should be planted in battery, & 100000. whē a breach should be made, & 300000. crownes when it were taken. It may be they beleued that (trying their fortune,) there might chance some vnexpected accident, which might cause a successe that all the Captaines had not dreamt of, but the successe was contrary to their expectations, for if we consider the new fortifications of the English, and the breaches which the Sea makes daylie, ouerflowing and breaking the little dummell dike, we shall finde the place stronger then before the siege.

The forts which the English men haue made vpon the South, are deuied from the Towne, and as hard to take as the other.

The Archduke had great reason to sweare (as his fugitiues saide) that he would not goe from the table before they had serued him, for the besieged haue laied a wager that they will giue it him so hotte as they will burne his fingers.

This Gentle man of *Don Catris* saide, that there were already about 3000. souldiers slaine before the Towne, besides Pioners, and aboue two thousand hurt.

The 10. of September, the Lord of *Chastillon* (being vpon the high Bulwarke of Sand-hill) with *Colonel Vchtenbruch* a Scottish Liuetenant, and other Gentlemen and men of commaunde, at two of the clocke after-noone had his head strooke of with a Canon shotte aboue the teeth, his braines flew against the

The Lord  
of Castille  
on slaine.



left cheeke of Colonell *Vehtenbruch*, and made him to reele a little, the *Scottish* Lieutenant was also greivously hurt.

These be ordinarie accidents in warre, neither is the the besieger any thing more free from them then the besieged, the greater then the lesse, the strong and valiant, then the feeble and weake.

That night 30. ships came into the Towne, and a greater number were dayly comming, the which staid at *Flesingue* for faire weather to waigh Anchor and set saile.

The 14. of September also in the night there entered 23. or 24. saile more, laden with victuals and munition, after the which the enemy shotte furiously, but by reason of a cloude and miste which did rise, they could not hitte nor hurte any one, wherevpon they ceased.

A fugitiue of the enemies said, that there were manie sicke men in the Campe, and that the *Italians* newly come out of *Sauoye* dyed by heapes; that the Canon from the Towne did euery daye kill many men, that the Souldiers fledde from the armie by troopes, and that many more would goe, if the horsemen kept not good garde abroad, and that it was to be feared, that if the men of warre were long held in this constraint, being ill payed, they would mutine.

The 15. of September the enemy shot almost all night fiery Bullets and Flints into the Towne, the which the besieged returned vnto them againe in the same coine.

The estate  
of the be-  
sieger.

The enemy had then but 16. peeces of Canon before the Towne, they had sent all the rest to diuers strong places,



places, except foureteene which they had sent to *Nieuport* to be new cast, for that they had beene spoiled and broken by the Canon of the Towne. They had likewise sent away part of their troopes, and those which remained in the armie stood in the water throughout all their trenches.

At the same time were surprised sundry letters from The Flemings out of hope to take Ostend, and that the Flemings were much afflicted, and yet notwithstanding the brute was that the Arch-duke would by no meanes heare speake of raising the siege, how long soeuer it did continue, or whatsoeuer it did cost.

The night before, the Duke of *Holftein* or *Holfatia*, brother to the King of *Denmarke*, and the Earle of *Hohenlo*, entred the towne with eight or nine saile, wherein their baggage was and some Poulder: they continued there two nights and two dayes, and then returned to *Middlebourgh* without any annoiance or losse.

There came oftentimes men of qualitie both from *England* and *France*, to see the place and the siege, but they staid not. Many of qualitie goe to see Ostend.

There went out also 18. or 20. ships without any harme, but one that was sunke and an anchor broke.

The Arch-dukes men made a halfe Moone or platforme in their trenches that are vpon the South at the foot of the Sand downes; meaning to plant sixe Canons thereon to batter the West-ravelin, vnder the West Bulwarke, where the besieged wrought dayly to make it higher and stronger.

The same day as the two former they did not shote



so much as they were accustomed, the which seemed very strange vnto the besieged.

The Noblemen whereof we haue formerly spoken, went the same day with the Gouvernour and Colonels of *Ostend*, to see the fortifications of the Towne, and the enemies trenches which are about it. The enemy shot 25. or 30. Canon shotte at one vollee, against the South corner of *Sand-hill*, and brake a little bridge set vpon the corner to passe vnto the *Falſe-Bray*, which hauing done, they ceased, whereby they might well see that they meant to giue an assault, and to take away all that might annoy them.

There went some out of the Towne with Loapeſtaues, which brought in a Spanish Lieutenant prisoner, who said, that many dyed in their Campe, and that many fled dayly, and more would flie, if the Horſe-men in guard (which ſcourd all the passages to the ampe,) did not hinder them, as hath beene formerly said.

A new  
Hauen at  
*Ostend*.

There was also made a new Hauen at the mouth or gollet, whereby the ships entred with lesse hazard and were more safe.

They built many houses in *Albertus-fort*, and round about, so as it might well be compared to a little towne, they thought the Arch-duke would make a Port or Hauen of the *Sluce* which is neere, to vse it instead of that of *Ostend*.

The 18. of September there entred about 24. saile into the Towne, laden with munition, victuals, bowes, piles, stakes, planks, and with diuers instruments and commodities, and they went forth by the gollet without any hurt or losse.

The same day they discharged thrice all the Canons,  
Muskets



Muskets and small shotte of the Towne, in honour of the Queene of *Englands* birth-day: this thundring put the enemy in alarme, who presently began to shoote their fierie Bullets and Flints into the Towne, to the which the besieged like men of honour and resolution failed not to replie.

They of the Towne hauing placed some Canons betwixt the vttermost Piles and the Rampart which lookes to the enemies Campe, and bends towards the Sea, were the cause that the Sea swallowed vp and carried away part of the ground, so as the opening or the breach of the little *Tummel dike* grew greater dayly.

The 19. Generall *Vere* being cured of his hurt, returned into the Towne.

Generall  
*Vere* returned to the  
Towne.

Almost all this night the enemy shotte fierie Bullets and Flints into the Towne, but without any effect.

About ten or eleuen of the clock, when the tyde went out, they of the towne (to the number of 200.) made a sallie vpon the Sands, to fier certaine Gabions, but beeing too Greene or wet, it would not take, where they lost one Souldier, & brought home ten or twelue hurt: in the meane time the enemies trenches were fraught with shot, and their Horsemen were vpon the Sea-shore, whether the Canon from the Sand-hill shot furiously, beeing a cleere Moone-light.

At the breake of day Generall *Vere* sent forth certaine aduenturers to the warre, to take some one of the enemies, who returned about two houres after noone, bringing with them two *Wallons* which they had taken in the armie, who said that the East quarter of the camp had beene fortified with the regiment of *Asincours*, wherein were 900. men, but they were ill payed.



The Arch-  
dukes ri-  
gour.

The Earle  
of Nor-  
thumber-  
land, & the  
Lord of  
Kessel,  
came to  
Ostend.

The same afternoone, the aduenturers or fributers brought in a Germane prisoner, who ( besides that which they vnderstoode of the two wallons ) said that the reason why they had fortified the Campe on the East side, was for that they expected the Arch-duke there, and that they had prepared a great number of bridges vpon wheeles, and many great sackes full of Sand, to stoppe the mouth, or at the least the opening or hole vpon the West, and that they had tried this inuention at the Sluces and found it good, and therefore they had caused a great number of these sackes to be made throughout all *Flanders*. And that vpon the East there was great store of Bowes, great stones and many tumbrelles, to build a fort according to the aduice of the Ingeners. And hee saide also that the Arch-duke had caused a Fourrier or Harbinger, a voluntarie Gentleman, and a Corporall, to be put in prison, for saying that in their opinions the Towne was not ready to be taken, and that they were in danger to be hanged: that the Spaniards were wonderfully incensed against them of *Bruges*, as hauing (about all other) pursued the siege of Ostend, saying they were all traitors to the king of Spaine and to the Arch-duke.

The 20. of September, the Earle of *Northumberland* and an English man came to *Ostend*, with the Lord of *Kessel*, brother to the Lord of *Lockerem*, one of whose seruants had his arme shot off with a Canon.

The same day the enemies did raise and fortifie their neereft trenches towards the Polder of the English.

The 21. of September, there entred 14. ships more into the Towne with victuals and munition, at whom the enemy made many a shot but could not hit any.

The



The same day the besieged had eight peeces of Cannon sent them out of *Zeland*, and they sent back some that were spoiled,

The 22. a Burges of *Scuse* came to *Flessingue*, who brought newes of the siege of *Ostend*: saying that the Arch-duke was resolved not to abandon it vntill he had taken it, although he were the last, & should loose himselfe there: and that the Souldiers were very ill payed, and might happily mutine: and that the countrie six leagues round about, was spoiled and vndone; and that the Souldiers were vp to the knees in water in their trenches, and had made little bankes to sit vpon, and to keepe their armes drie, and that all the Hospitalles of *Flanders*, *Brabant*, *Lisle*, and all the neighbour Townes were full of hurt men, which were in all seauen thousand at the least.

The same day there came towards night eight saile more into the Towne, with munition and victuals, at whom the Arch-dukes men did not shoote, being not able to see them by reason of the darknesse.

The 23. of September it was written from *Ostend*, that Colonel *Vehstenbruche* had beene slaine in the English quarter with a Musket shot the night before, which strooke him in the backe and came out at his throate: and that a little before a French Captaine named *Pomerade*, had likewise beene slaine with a Musket in the head.

The same day there entred two ships by the mouth or gollet, laden with all kinde of Munition and victualles, and two Dromlers laden with bowes: the same night the enemye brought great store of bowes vpon the East-side vnder the Fortes, labouring very much



betwixt the *Catteyes* and *Reisern-heubt*; they brought also vpon the South a great number of Wagons laden with bowes, as if they ment to stay there ten yeares.

Fortificati-  
on of the  
besieged.

On the other side they of the Towne laboured as earnestly in the English trenches, vpon the West and Southside of the Towne, and ioyned them together with certaine forts, that is, with the Boulwarke which is within the Polder without the Towne, and the two abandoned trenches with the halfe Moone, the which is before the trenches on the west part, so as these foure peeces were made all one, without all danger of water in Winter.

The English trench vpon the West was made stronger and thicker, and also more aduanced towards the South and North, cuen vnto the causie (the which is about 50. or 60. foote long) where before it was open, so as the enemy might easily shoote vpon the Polder Bridge, and did commonly hurt and kill some soldiers.

The halfe Moone on the West side was ioyned with *Cathey* fort, to the West trench with a Ditch and Piles, and Yron pikes before it, so as this halfe Moone was exceeding strong.

Those of the Towne placed two Canons in the casemate, the which is betwixt the West Boulwarke and *Helmont*, to batter the enemies trenches, right against the Porke-espicke, the enemy did all he could to dismount and breake them, and in the end they drew downe a double Canon against the Porke-espike, and from thence played vpon these two peeces, but they shot so furiously from the Towne, as the enemy was forced to cease his battery being broken: after that the  
enemy



enemie brought downe two other peece's, vpon the waters side, which runnes by the little broken ditche, with the which they shotte against a Palisadoe which they of the Towne had made round about the *Porke-spike*, to defend the foote of this fortification, least the force of the water should carry it away: those of the Towne hauing discovered their desseigne, plaied vpon this batterie from *Sand-hill*, and the *Falſe-Bray*, which is vnder *Helmont*, and from the West-port, so as they were forced to cease.

About noone, a *Frenchman* of the enemies armie came and yeelded himselfe into the Towne, where he had sometimes serued: He said that *Count Boucquoy* had Count Buc-  
quoy made  
Lieutenant  
generall to  
the Arch-  
duke. beene made Lieutenant generall in the place of *Don Catris*, and that they without made a chaine to carrie vpon boates from the Old-hauen, thinking therewith to doe some great exploite being in their power. The same day a Marriner and a Souldier fled out of the Towne to the enemie.

The 24. of September, a Souldier of *Lorraine* came from the enemies campe into the Towne, who said that many Souldiers fled from the campe, and that they were out of hope to take the Towne, and that those of the Towne did so annoy them with their Canon, as the company vnder which he was (being at the first a hundred and ten men) was reduced to 40. both by reason of the Towne Canon, as of such as were run away for want of pay.

That night three Shippes with a Barke entred the Towne, being laden with victuals, at whom the enemy discharged some vollees of Canon shot, and slew in one of them a woman with a childe.

E

They



They brought out of the English trenches into the Towne 22. men flaine and hurt by the enemies Canon, which shott among them that laboured.

Vpon the West side they discouered great store of Bowes, Trees, and such like things, which the enemy caused to be brought in Carts.

Vpon the West-Bulwarke of the towne they planted a new batterie with defences about it, to play vpon the enemies trenches, and vpon their battetic which was belowe betwixt *Reisernheubt* and the *Cateys*.

They also made an other batterie vpon the entrie of the Hauen in the new Towne, along the bridge by which they passe, from whence they plaied vpon the *Cateys*, to dislodge the enemies shotte which played vpon the Souldiers, and others that were in the False Bray, and made great slaughter of them: thus they dayly changed their counter-batteries, as the enemy altered his batteries; the enemy did not play so wholly with his Canon as he had done, but fought onely to spoile them of the Towne with his Musket shotte.

The enemy came to view a trenche that was false, the which his Excellencie had caused to be made the yeare before, vpon the South and East side to defend the ships entring by the gollet and the East-port.

The 25. of September, a ship laden with planks was cast away, yet all the men were saued: there entred some others into the towne, at whom the enemy shott but hit no man.

In the morning the enemy shott some fierie Bullets and Flint-stones into the Towne, but they ceased by reason of a great Raine. About ten or eleuen of the clock did rise a great Northerne winde, the which on  
the



the East-side by the gollet, and on the West by the little broken dike did driue great aboundance of watets vp into the Country, so as the enemies trenches were so full as they were forced to flie from them to their Platformes and Caualliers, the which they had raised along their trenches, wherevpon their Canon was planted: which they of the towne seeing ranne vp to the Ramparts, crying; Charge, charge: Generall Vere hauing intelligence thereof, commanded presently that they should shoote among them, so as many of the enemies Souldiers were flaine.

A little Gallie of *Zeland* striuing to enter by day into the Towne, had her Mast broken with a Canon shot, and was in daunger to runne on ground, the enemy shotte furiously at them, and killed a Marri-  
ner: in the end the Galley entred the Towne without any more harme.

The water before mentioned, carryed away part of the enemies trenches right against the *Porke-espike*, without doing any harme to the Towne.

The 26. of September they shotte fiercely on eyther side.

That day the enemies trenches were still full of water, and the breach of the little dike was risen the night before, and their batterie betwixt the *Cateys* and *Reisern-heubt* was much indamaged: the countrie was ouer-flowed a good league about the towne, so as their forts from the South to the West were all inuironed with water, that is *Colombie*, *La pierre S. lean*, *Isabella* and *Grossendurst*: besides this the new Fortes at *Cowebri-bridge*, and all the trenches from the West vnto *Cowebri-bridge*, and so to the South & East, euen vnto the great



marrish and behinde it were couered with water, along which trêches they had made diuers plat-formes, whereon they had planted some Canons, whether the souldiers retyred themselves, and during these great waters they could not go one vnto another, these ouerflowings were vsuall vnto them euery new and full Moone.

The enemy did also make a new fort at the foote of the East downes, planting some Canon there to shoote at the ships, the which must passe towards the South before they could enter into the Towne ditches, by reason of the length of the hauē. They had made two other batteries before vpon the East, there is one vpo the North at the foote of the downes, to shoote at the ships when occasion serues, before they come into the Hauen or vnder the Towne; the other is vpon the West. at the foote of the West downes: and this new batterie is 25. or 30. yardes Southward of the downes, as farre from the Towne as the rest, and all are made to shoote at the ships when they passe by the South to enter into the Hauen.

The same day the enemy plaied from the West vpon the Towne with 18. Canons, and from the South with two, and on the East side, from whence with one only Canon shot they did some hurt.

The Towne was much indamaged by the tide before mentioned, in the false Braie of Sand-hill, in the olde dike of the Sea, which is of the North side of the olde Towne, and in the dike of the East Sea; but by the wisedome of the confederate Prouinces, there are alwayes worke-men within the Towne which haue charge to repaire all breaches of the Sea, and there is  
also



also good prouision of stufte fit for that purpose, the which is very well appointed for the preservation of the Towne.

The 27. of September, the winde was some thing laid, whereupon the waters did fall a little, and did no more harme to the Towne: but without, there were many trenches and fortifications broken: that day the Canon did not playe on either side but onely Musket shot.

\* All night the 28. of September, the Archdukes men shot many fire Bullets and Flint stones into the Towne, and certaine little vesselles full of Nailes and Bullets chained togeather, with such like things, whereof one fell behinde the Gouvernors lodging, and burst against a wall, making a noise as if it had beene full of diuels, but it hurt no man.

The prisoners said that their men thought to kill a hundred men at a time with this inuention.

All the enemies trenches were broken and open, the water was within and without, and they were forced by reason of the water to abandon the trench neere to the Porke-espike.

Those of the Towne made a new peece at the North-east corner of the Bulwarke, to plant two peeces which were vpon the mouth of the Raye, in the new Towne to entertaine the enemies Muskitiers which lie in *Ray-heubten* when it is drie.

The 29. of September, at night the great Constable of the *Hargubuziers* was slaine, and betwixt the day & the night, there were 40. men slaine and hurt; and for that the winde held North-east, and North-west sixe dayes together so as no ships could get out of the Ha-



uen, there were three hundred hurt and sicke in the ships to go into *Zeland*.

That night the enemy shot furiously into the Towne with fire Bullets, and in the morning they dismounted one of the Towne Canons which was vpon Sand-hill, the which hurt seuen or eight men, whereof Maister *Henry* one of the chiefe Canoniers was one. The enemies trenches were still full of Water, and by reason of the winde no man went into the Towne, nor out by Sea.

The 30. of Septemher, as they set the watch, fire tooke the Poulder at the ruelin of the *Porke-espike*, which spoyled fixe English men and hurt many others.

The same day, the Smith of the Towne aduancing too farre (being drunke) was slaine.

The same day also, came foure English Shippes laden with victuals, whereof one entred the Towne by the Gollet, the other three (by reason of the great Winde,) werẽ forced to passe on and to recouer *Zeland*, and so did all the Ships of warre.

The Arch-  
duke re-  
solues  
to raise the  
siege.

The Arch-duke had drawne much money from them of *Flanders* for the siege of *Ostend*, and had done all they could to take it, as hath beene shewed: but in the beginning of October (according to the opinion of the Counsell of Warre, and the admonitions of most of the Townes of the low Countries) they had resolved to raise the siege from *Ostend*, and to keepe Garisons in the fortes, but whilst that Winter lasted: the Flemmings aduertised hereof sent the Bishoppes of *Gant*, *Bruges* and *Ypre* with some other men of qualitie vnto them, who



who went to *Niewport* casting themselves at their highnesse feete, and shewing them the great miserie and desolation where-into the *Countrie of Flanders* should fall if *Ostend* were not taken, the which they laied open vnto them with manie patheticall reasons, the which mooued their highnesses (contrarie to their first resolution) to promise by the faith of Princesses, not to forsake the siege, and that they would trie all meanes possible to bring the enterprise to good effect, so as they might be succored by them of *Flanders*, the which the deputies promised to doe to the vttermost of their powers and to that ende they would giue sixe hundred thousand Crownes more besides the sixe hundred thousand Crownes promised the fourth of Iuly, and upon the conditions specified in the letters of consent which were then drawen, and that without any diminution of the tribute of ninety thousand crownes monethly, the which they had already paied many moneths.

And to satisfie the curious reader I haue added heerevnto the letters of the fourth of Iuly, contayning the aboue mentioned conditions.



*Most gracious Princesse and Lady.  
Most gracious Prince and Lord.*

**T**He Clergie and foure members of your Highnesse countrie and Countie of *Flanders*, hauing heard a proposition of halfe a denier of the hundred, made vnto them in your behalfe in the cittie of *Bruges* the 4. of Iuly last past, they together with the Knights, townes and Castels of the said countrie, with all the heads and commons, euery one in his quarter, doe humbly thanke your Highnesses of the good inclination they shew by effect, to the prosperitie and freedom of this miserable countrie so worthy of compassion, by the enterprise they haue now in hand; assuring themselves that the Almighty God will bleesse it, and will giue it a good ende, to the ease of the poore commons miserably vexed for these many yeares, and to the encrease of the name, honour, and glory of your Highnesses. And although by reason of former impositions, and the pouerty of the country, they may well excuse themselves of the demaund made vnto them by the said proposition: yet to shew the singuler and great zeale and good will they haue to assist your Highnesses with this last money, and with all their power and strength; they haue consented and offer by these presents to pay 600000. *Flemish* crownes, the one moitie before, and the rest after the siege of *Ostend*, to be employed as it is mentioned in the proposition, and with the conditions, precautions and reseruations specified in the letters of consent: And first that the demaund of 600000. crownes, bearing date the 24. of February last



last past, shall remaine by meanes of this present consent voide and of no effect.

Item that the managing and distribution of the said 600000. crownes shall remaine with them, as an imposition of the first demaund vpon euery fire, and shall be made by such persons as they shall choose and put in trust: and moreouer vpon the saide summe there shall be deducted all such money as hath beene and is dayly disbursed for diuers stufes and workes, and also for Mariners, Carpenters, Sawers of Plankes and other workemen, and generally for all such as are employed in the like things in the campe, and that according to the declaration taxed, and the estimation of them of *Flanders*.

In like sort there shall be a good deduction made vnto them out of the said summe, of the interests or rents paide, or to be payed, for money which they haue borrowed for the aduancement of this businesse and exploite of warre.

Moreouer there shall be abated what they haue disbursed and furnished weekly, and what they shall disburse for the contribution and entertainment of the mutined Souldiers being in garrison in *Isabella* forte, with that which depends thereon.

The said Estates of *Flanders* humbly beseech your Highnesses, that it would please you to accept and take in good part this their consent, and be well pleased with them in regarde thereof, without requiring any further succoures for this exploite, and beleue that heerein they haue exceeded, taking vpon them a burthen exceeding their forces, in giuing the said summe besides the ordinarie contribution of 90. thousand

F

Crownes



Crownes a Moneth . They humbly beseech your Highnesse to do them so much grace, as presently after the taking of *Ostend*, to free the country from souldiers, except onely such as shall be necessary for the garrisons on the frontiers, to the end they may haue meanes to free themselues of the great debts where-with they stand charged by reason of the exploite.

---

### *Their Highnesses answer.*

**T**Heir Highnesses hauing a priuate dispatch made vnto them, conteining the consent of the Cleargie, and foure members of *Flanders*, do take their conclusion in good part vpon the preposition made vnto them in their Highnesses names , and are well pleased with the affection they shew, and haue alwaies shewed vnto their seruice , and doe accept the consent and offer made by them of the summe of 600000. Crownes, instead of the halfe denier of the hundred which they had demanded, to be paide according to the conditions contined in the letters of the said consent ; to which effect their Highnesses doe giue full power and commandement to euery one whome it may concerne to conforme themselues and obay : and will that Letters Pattents be granted vnto them , such as shall be needfull for to make the leuie . They doe also graunt and agree, that out of the said summe according to the supplication of the Cleargie , and the foure members : the money disbursed by them shall be deducted, or shall be disbursed for this exploit,  
name.



namely in Marriners, Watermen, Carters, Carpenters, or any other handy-crafts men, and generally all those that serue the Campe in such like things; or that depend thercon, according to the declaration and reasonable taxe and estimation of the Cleargie, and foure aboue named members, and in like sorte, whatsoeuer they shall disburse for the contribution of the mutined Souldiers of *Isabella* fort, remaining onely vpon their charge, and what they haue formerly payde vpon this occasion.

They declare also, that they hope this desseigne shall come to a happy end, before that all this money be imployed, and that their meaning is not to charge the countrie any more: yet they expect that as for their parts they will neuer abandon them, so they will doe the like in case necessitie requires, and that they will not leaue this worke vnperfect: they promise also to discharge the Prouince from all men of warre, but such as shall be needfull to arme the Frontiers.

Giuen at the Campe before *Ostend*, the 10. day of August 1601.

Signed *Isabella, Albertus,*  
and vnderneath,  
*Vasseur.*

Although this summe of 600000. Crownes was to be payed at two times: that is; the one halfe ready downe, and the other after the taking of *Ostend*, yet their Highnesses made this demaund presently, which followeth.



## The Arch-dukes.

**R** Euerent and worthy Lordes and fathers in God well beloued and faithfull, well beloued and wise, hauing vnderstanding that the 300000. crownes which you haue granted, & were leuied to be imploied in the necessities of the siege, are almost all spent, as well in the two stiuers a day which is giuen to euery souldier for his seruice, as in worke-men, Wagons, Ships, Fagots, and other like stuffe, and that of necessity we must continue, we haue thought good (for feare least the worke begunne, should quaille) to intreate you by these our letters, to assist vs with the other three hundred thousand crownes remaining, the which you haue promised vs after the taking of *Ostend*: seeing that wee meane not to imploy it elsewhere, but in the foresaide affaires, and that you may be assured that our intention is not to raise the siege nor to depart from hence, before we haue taken the place by the grace of God, whome we pray to haue you in his holy keeping, giuen at the Campe before *Ostend*, in August. 1601.

Signed Isabella, Albertus, and  
vnderneath Vasseur.

---

The superscription was. To the reuerend and worthy Lordes and fathers in God, our welbeloued, faithfull and wise, the Clergie and foure members of our Country & County of *Flanders*, as cōmanding there.

The Clergy & foure mēbers of *Flanders* yeeld to this demand, & for the speedy leauying of this sum they writ vnto the Townes and Castelles in manner following.

Ho-



**H**onourable and wise, &c. Although the issue of the desseigne begun against *Ostend*, growes more long then wee did thinke or expect, notwithstanding, not to suffer so commendable an enterprize of their excellencies to be ruinated, and suddainely to loose all the aduantage and expence that hath beene made so freely, it is necessary that your Lordships according vnto that which we haue granted vpon the serious demaund, which hath beene made vnto vs by their highnesses, that you leaue with all speede, and hold ready the other Moitie of your partes taxed of the some of 600000. crownes granted by vs, and that you deliuer it into the handes of our comissaries in your quarter, at the latest by the fifteene of September next comming as much as you hold deare and desire to see a good issue of this enterprize, to our peace and prosperity, and faile not herein for any excuse or pretext whatsoeuer, &c. At *Bruges* the 30. of August, 1601. and vnderneath.

*Your Lordships good friendes, the  
Clergie and foure members of  
the Countie of Flanders, vn-  
der written. F. de Grotte,*

*Let vs retorne to our siege.*

**T**He first of October, the enemye shotte fire Bullets and Stones into the Towne, and in the morning againe more furiously, so as a fire Bullet falling behinde a Burgesses house, set fire of a barrell of Poulder, the which burnt all the house, and no man knowes how that Poulder came there. The weeke before two Marchants of Poulder, buying Poulder of



the souldiers which they had stolne, and sould it for little or nothing, were taken and punished, the one who was a Burgeois was banished the Towne for three yeares, the other who was a Marriner was fined at 18. crownes to the poore.

The breach of the little dike grew still more large and deepe, by which did passe a great quantity of Water vp into the Countrie, the which did much hinder the enemies desseigne.

The Arch-dukes men laboured earnestly to carrie fagots from their battery which was neere to the towne vnto *Alberts* fort.

The 2. of October, there went out of the Towne by night about 60. sailes, whereof some had attended eight dayes, and were kept in by ill weather, but then they went all out without any hurt.

Those of the Towne made hollow a ditch to cause the Water of the Gollet to take a right course towards the enemies trenches, the which came beating against their Counter-scarfe, which worke was made by 60. souldiers, euerye of the which did gaine a Doller a day.

The Earle of *Northumberland* went out of the Towne by night with some others, the Bourge-maister and officer of the Towne went with him into *Zeland*, to recouer stuffe to repaire the workes which were broken.

The 3. of October, there entred thirty foure shippes into *Ostend* by the Gollet, vpon whom the enemye discharged aboute seuentie shot, but they onely slue but one Marriner, and hurt some others, and tore their sailes. There were three laden with Poulder,  
some



some with Bauins, and other stuffe fit for fortification, the rest with munition and victualles, and with three double and eight demie Canons; there remained yet five ships without, towards the South vnder the the Sea dike, to stay for more Water at night: right against these ships there was a little dike broken wherein they of the Towne laboured all the could to stoppe it, vpon whome the enemy plaied furiously both from the East and the South, but the Bullets flue ouer them.

About noone the enemy did beat in peeces the bridge which went betwixt the Polder and the West trenches of the English, so as they of the Towne were forced to make a longer, to go from the Polder to the English quarter.

Captaine *Nicholas Van-den Lier*, was by them of the Towne made generall of the Artillery, in the place of *Vchtenbruch*.

The same day there came great store of money into the Towne for the payment of the souldiers and other necessities.

The fourth daye, the five Shippes whereof we haue spoken, were still at the mouth of the Ha-uen for want of Water, the enemy shotte continuallye vppon them but they hurt no man.

There were also two ships ready to depart from the Towne, but they could not stirre for the same reason.

The night before a small English barke was sunke, the which laie at Anchor in the Gollet on the South-side of the Towne.



At the breake of day they made a Sallic of 500. men out of the Towne on the South-west side vpon *Cow-bridge*, where they tooke two halfe Moones from the enemy, who fled away: they slue thirtie sixe, and brought away ten prisoners. Of those of the Towne an English Captaine had his legge shotte off, and two French Captaines with some seauen or eight Souldiers were hurt; but seeing that about 2000. of the enemies came vpon them, they retired themselues in time, bringing many Caslockes and Spanish Hattes into the Towne.

About noone *Count Frederick Vanden Berg*, set fire on all his lodgings, and went with his troopes to *Alberts forte*, they of the towne thought it was to fortifie their trenches vpon the West-downes against their Sallies.

The Prisoners of whome we spake, which were *Burgenions*, sayd, that when his Highnesse came before *Ostend* he had 9000. foote, and 1500. horse, and that since there were 5000. more come vnto him, but now they were not about 8000. and that they were in great want, and many sicke, and that many fled by reason of the bad pay, for euery Souldier had but two stivers a day and a loafe and a halfe, and sometimes they receiued not a penny in three weekes.

The 5. of October there entred 8. ships by the gollet, whereof two were shotte through and greatly indamaged by the Canon, for that they stayed too long at the entrie of the Hauen, yet there was but one man slaine.

That night the enemy shotte fierie Bullets and stones into the Towne, without any great hurt doing,  
by



by day they shot likewise against the English trenches & the Poulder, where they of the Towne labored, whereof they hurt some: a Canon shot beat in peeces a planke which a souldier carried vpon his shoulder, without hurting him.

The regiment of *Cont Frederick* descended to the Sand downes mid-way betwixt the Towne and *Calberts* fort.

The 6. day, the enemy shot not against the Towne on the East side, but onely brought certaine stufte to make some worke, and about noone they did see them carrie many Bauins to the next fort or halfe Moone, into their trenches neere vnto the English trenches, towards Cow-bridge: about the same time the Sargeant-Maiors Lieutenant was slaine vpon the West Boulwarke.

The 7. of October, the enemy shot furiously with their fire bullets and stones into the Towne from morning vntill night.

The same night, they discharged al the Canons in the Towne, with many volles of small shot, for ioy of the birth of the French Kings sonne.

That day towards night a small English barke was lost being laden with Beare and victuals, hauing stroake against the piles right against the olde towne, yett all the men were saued, and that night there entred two ships into the Towne laden with victuals.

The 8. of October, they without raised vp a newe Plat-forme and batterie on the East-side towards the South at the foote of the downes, the which aduanceth towards the Hauen, to plant foure Canons thereon, (as they might discern by the Ca-



noniers) to annoy the shippes, they laboured not all that day on the West part; after dinner they slue three men within the Towne with one great shot, and hurt many.

The 9. of October, they without shot vehemently into the Towne with their fiery Bullets and flints, & hurt some souldiers in the day and night.

At night about 25. saile, entred into the Towne by the Gollet, with munition and victualles, and five Shippes with some Barkes went forth: the enemy shot about sixty Canon shot after them, but could not annoy them.

They without brought the batterie or plat-forme which they had begun vpon the East, three yardes nearer, but they did not yet shoote from it.

The 10. day they of the Towne discovered that the enemy had laboured much in their fort, which is betwixt the *Cateyes* and *Reisern heubt*, and that they had made it very high and large vnder the Sands, or midway to the Port, as if they had intended to make a Bulwarke there.

There came a great Ship to the South-east of the port of the Towne, the which had laine there 14. dayes on ground, and could not stirre for want of water, there went out three or foure Marriners to helpe to draw it from thence, but whilst they were busie at their worke the enemy came and slue one cruelly, giuing him about 40. wounds, and setting fire of the shippe, the rest saued themselves.

The same day a little English barke came towardes the Port, but being a great calme two of the enemies barkes came to him with owers and tooke him, they  
of



of the Towne thought that this had bin done of purpose, for that the English & the French might trafficke freely in the enemies Campe.

Vpon the East the enemy made a great trench on the East-side of their new battery, and likewise along the South, stretching out right against that which goes from the South to the North, at the East of their fort which is at the downes, as if they meant to lodge some troupes there: they beganne to worke there presentlye after the flight of a French Corporall, who went and presently yeelded himselfe vnto them.

The 11. of October there entred sixteene or seuentene vessels laden with victuals and all kindes of munition into the Towne, they without shot furiously at them on the East part, yet did no other harme but sunke one laden with Bauins; all the men and Bauins were saued.

A Bullet comming from the West part fell into a ship and stroake off both a boyes legges.

The enemies did raise vp their halfe Moone, the which is betwixt the *Cateyes* and *Reisern-heubt*, and did likewise labour hardly at Cow-bridge, where they did raise a great plat-forme neere vnto the English trenches, and vpon the West they did not cease to labour in their trenches.

They of the Towne shot nine Canon shot in the day time from the Shippes, but the enemy answered them not,

The 12. of October beginning to growe darke, some of the enemies came vpon the South-side of the Hauen, to spie and discouer the Townsmens workes,



who hauing discried them, they sent 6. or 8. leapers after them, who slue one, and brought away three prisoners, whereof the one was a Sergeant, and all of the countrie of *Hennault*.

This night there went forth 48. ships, at whome the enemy made not one shotte, although it were so light as he might easilie discern them: there entred no ships but a small Barke.

Captaine *Grenu* sallied forth at night with some of his men, but for that the enemy did not present himselfe so soone, he sent back most of his men into the towne, and remained behinde with 15. or 16. of his Souldiers, beyond the gollet, to attend what the enemy would doe, who comming forth vpon him, he charged them, and slue some at the push of the Pike, but seeing 150. horse comming on the backe side, he retired without any losse.

The Arch-dukes men did not labour so much as they were accustomed in the trenches which they had made vpon the East, nor in the Fort betwixt the *Cateys* and *Reisern-haupt*, the which they did raise with Sande and Fagots, neither were they seene to labour at all vpon the South or West.

The same day, two women great with childe sitting together at a doore, were slaine with one Canon shotte.

The 13. of October early in the morning, the enemy began to shoote his fierie Bullets and stones into the Towne, but there was no hurt seene or heard of.

They of the Towne had begunne a Trench before the Bridge which is vpon the mouth or gollet, with a Pallissadoe, and before the trench they made



made a little Palissadoe with Pikes of Yron.

In the night the enemies raised vp their batterie which is at the East side of the Sand-downes, stretching towards the North of them: but they did not then plant any Canon. They laboured also without intermission at their batterie betwixt the *Cateys* and *Reisern haupt*, vpon the West-hauen, raising it very high, and neuer went from it all the day.

There were moreouer the very same daye, eight or ten Souldiers flaine and hurt by the enemies Canon.

The 14. of October there grewe a great alarme in the Towne. Generall Vere with the Gouvernour Colonelles and Captaines, ranne to the West trenches where the alarme was: fixe or seauen of the enemies men at armes had giuen it, passing at a lowe water from the West to the East through the olde Towne and the Gollet, they of the Towne shotte at them, yet fve of them escaped.

Six or seauen horsemen giue the alarme to the Towne.

This night two ships entred by the East-hauen without any annoyauce.

The enemies laboured daylye at their Trenches towards the East, as also vpon the South at *Cow-bridge*, and vpon the West at their batterie betwixt *Cateys* and *Reisern haupt*, there were eight or ten Souldiers hurt with the enemies Canon.

The 15. day at night, the enemy shotte many artificiall Bullets and Flintes into the Towne without any great harme dooing. The same night there entered nine shippes laden with munition and victuals into the Towne, at whome the enemy shotte much but in vaine.



The enemy had two Frigats built like Galleys, in every one of the which they might place 18. or 20. men, whom they sent sculking along the coast, to surprise some ship, but fearing a storme, they strooke their sailes and retired with their Owers towards the West, passing along the towne, and neuer forsaking the coast.

The weeke before they had taken three ships, and hurt about 30. men in them, whome they cast ouerborde, bringing them only in, that were found, one of the hurt recouered the fleete with swimming.

The trenches without vpon the West vnto *Cowbridge*, and those which stretch towards the South and East, were full of water, so as the enemy was forced to retire to his Plat-formes: and yet there was no storme.

The 16. of October, sixe ships laden with victuals and munition came into the towne, after whome the enemy discharged about 50. Canon shot, but did them little or no harme.

They brought many Cart-loades of Bauins and other stufte to the Forte, which is in the East without the towne, to fortifie it.

That day the Canon plaide little, but there were six Souldiers hurt with Musket shott in the towne.

The 17. the enemies shotte very furiously with their fierie Bullets and stones into the towne.

In the night they did cast themselues into the halfe Moone, which is beyond the gollet before the bridge, in the which (according to the order which was giuen by the commanders) there were none but labourers which did presently abandon it: the enemies being entered, they were presently welcomed with Canon-shot  
from



from the Bulwarke of the Spaniards, and from *Pekel*, the which had beene planted there expresse: as also by a troope of Musketers from the *Raueijn* which is vpon the counterscarfe right against the Spanish Bulwarke, so as they left many of their men there: there were but foure of the towne hurt: the Chirurgians of the towne went thether afterwards, and brought away Sacks full of mans grease which they had drawne out of their bodies. There was as great aboundance of bloud, as if there had beene a great combate fought, and there was much without the halfe Moone: the ground was strowed of all sides with armes, legges and hands: such as went thether first, found much money vpon the dead men, and garments of good price, with perfumed Gloues, whereby it seemes that many Spaniards and men of commaund were slaine there. They had also brought with them many preparatiues and deuises to burne the Bridge, and many Spades, Hammers, Hatchets, Pike-axes, and other instruments, as it were to make some fortification.

The enemye carryed his batterie from betwixt the *Cateyes*, vnto the Sea side towards the North.

At night there went forth foureteene shippes, and not any one came in. A *Burguignon* prisoner said, that in this last assault there were not slaine about eightie fve or eightie sixe vpon the place, amongst the which there were some men of commaund: hee sayde moreouer that they would stay it out all Winter, and that his Highnesse had made prouision of stufte to builde lodgings for the Souldiers round about the towne.

The 18. there was nothing remarkeable, but that



two French men fled to theemie.

The 19. of October, theemie made high defences vpon their battery at the East: afternoone they of the Towne discouered a great troupe of their enemies going from *Alberts* fort to the fort of *La Pierre S. Jean*, and vpon the East side many Wagons laden with Bauins the which they carried to the fort they haue at the downes.

The same day, there were 9. or 10. souldiers of the Towne slaine and hurt.

The Arch-  
dukes men  
approched  
neerer by  
a 130.  
yardes.

The 20. day at night, the Arch-dukes men made a long trench neere vnto the lower end of the Gollet, 120, or 130. yardes vnder their new battery, and approched neerer vnto the Towne with 32. Gabions in length and foure in thickeesse: it was for this purpose that the troupes (we spake of) passed the day before from the West to the East, to defend them that should labour in this worke, and that by day they conducted so manie Wagons laden with Bauins, to imploy them in the night worke.

This day theemie shot from this new batterie, and to aduance this trench they left their trenches vpon the South and West part.

At night there came into the Towne foure ships and one barke full of men, theemie shot at them in vaine, they discouered their Gabions nine thicke.

A Germane of theemies Campe came & yeelded himselfe into the Towne, who said, that there was exceeding great want in it: that all souldiers which could finde any meanes to flie forsooke the armie; and that theemie would plant nine Canons at his Gabions.

Afternoone the water being retired they began to labour



bour againe at their batterie, betwixt the *Cateyes* and *Reisern-heubt*. which they drew down along to the Sea, to batter the ships on the North-side of the olde towne, as well on the West side as on the East, wherein they spent all that night.

The 22. of October, 44. ships past out of the Towne, and two entred, one laden with English Beare and the other of *Breda*, at whom the enemy shot little.

The same day before noone the enemy brought manie cartes laden with bauins to the fort which is at the downes, and did lengthen the new trench, which is at the lower end of the Gollet with three Gabions, and after dinner there past a great troupe of Souldiers from the West to the East.

The foresaid fugitiue said that the enemies resolutions was to make his chiefe attempt vpon the East-side, and he said moreouer that if he could stoppe the entrie of the ships, he would be maister of the Towne within 14. dayes.

They plaied both with Canon and Musket on either side all that day.

After dinner they of the Towne discovered aboue a 100. carts which the enemy conducted to the East, to the fort which is beneath the downes.

They of the towne labored continually at the Blindes (the which are workes of earth, of a meane height, square or in cubit, to couer them which go in the streets, and to receiue the Bullets) against the enemies batteries and trenches which are at the *Cateys*; that day the fire tooke their lodgings on the East-side.

The night of the 22. day there was much shooting on either side, both with Canon and Musket, so as it

H

hindred



hindered the enemies worke, whereas they had lately planted their Gabions: yet they did not leaue to conduct many cartes with Bauins towarde their new battery, from whence they made eight or ten shot that day, as also some from their batteries which are at the downes.

About ten of the clocke at night 25. or 26. ships went out at the Hauen and the enemy neuer shot at them: there entred two laden with English Beere and other victualles, at whome they made two shot, but hurt them not.

The 23. of October, the enemy shot all night with his fire Bullets and stones into the Towne, the which hurt some souldiers.

The same night as the former, they of the Towne shot furiously vpon the Gabions which are neere vnto the Goller, and hindred the enemies worke: there went forth also three or foure Shippes at whom they neuer shot.

They without, although they laboured not, yet did they cause great store of Fagots to be carried to the East: they were continually busie at their workes which are betwixt the *Cateyes* and *Resern-heubt*, the which they carried tawardes the North: where (in my opinion) they did them of the Towne a great pleasure, freeing the North-east part from the furious waues of the Sea, the which did much endamage them before the *Porke-espike* and *Helmont*,

The 24. of October they shot fire Bullets and stones into the enemies Camp.

A Shippe going out of the Hauen at night did runne vpon the Sands on the enemies side, the maister and a little



little boy saued themselves, two Carpenters were drowned thinking to recouer the towne by swimming: there were besides three sicke men, with a woman and her childe, whom the enemy tooke and then set fire of the shippe.

They did nothing but carry Fagots to the East, they of the Towne did not see them worke, but they found that their Gabions were seuentene large and thirty five in length. The continuall shooting of the besieged did much annoy them in their worke. As for their batteries of *Cateyes* and *Reisern-heubt*, they laboured continuallye, raising them and fortifying them daylie.

The 25. of October, a Captaine of a Shippe went in a cocke boate round about the Gabions, which are vpon the Gollet to view them, where he found no man, nor any one nere, but onely three which had bin slaine with the Towne Canon.

That day there went no Shippe in nor out, and for that it rained much, there was no shooting, and likewise for the same reason the enemy left labouring,

The night of the twenty sixt day, was foule weather and a great tempest, which was the cause that the Canon plaied not, but in the morning they saluted one another.

The Sea (being swelled extraordinarily by reason of this tempest,) carried away some of their Gabions which were not yet fully filled nor fastened.

The Water at the very same time was risen ten or twelue yardes vp into the trench which is vpon the Gollet, so as the enemy had no man there, and vpon the South and South-west a League and a halfe vp



into the countrie, which couered most of the enemies trenches: and there was no thing to be seene drye but their Plat-formes, whether they had retyred themselves, this torment was the cause that no ship went in nor out. It did somewhat indamage the towne at the *Porke-espike*, and the *False-Braye*, yet not so much but it was in few houres repaired.

The 27. at night, according to their commendable custome, they shott store of fierie Bullets and Flints of eyther side. There entred an English Barke laden with Beere.

The enemy was fortified with a regiment of *Italians*, and some *Wallons*.

The night of the 28. day, foure Barks went forth, at whom they did not shoote; but none came in.

The same night they of the Towne made a Sallie of 200. Souldiers, and some Marriners, the water being high, and went vpon the enemies Gabions, many of the which they brake and cut, with many sacks full of earth which they found within them, whereof they brought some into the Towne.

After noone they might see passe towards the East quarter, two troopes of Cartes laden with Bauins.

That day they shott but little on eyther part, and there was but one man slaine within the towne.

The 29. there went no vessell in nor out.

There were a great number of Gabions which they of the Towne had not broken: The enemy began to worke behinde them, and did not leaue for all the Canon of the Towne which played furiously vpon them.

They without had made a great worke vpon the  
East,



East, which they of the towne thought to be some new Forte or Batterie, but in the ende they found it was a Chanell or Conduict to passe from *Plasfenthale* to the Conduict of *Bruges*, conteining about halfe a League, that they might more commodiously furnish the Forts of the East with munition and victuals, as well as those of the West, called *Saint Pierre Isabella* and *Albertus*, which receiue their prouisions by water.

About ten of the clocke they of the towne made a Sallie of 60. or 70. men, and some Leapers and Fri-boters, charging vpon the enemies Gabions the which they tooke. There were about 60. men labouring in them, who fled: presently there came 35. or 36. of the enemies Horse vpon them, so as hauing viewed well the gabions, they were forced to retire: one of their souldiers was slaine, and three or foure hurt with the Canon. The Canon of the Spanish Bulwarke and of *Pekel* (which had beene planted to that end,) played through the enemies, and ouer-threw some of their horse-men, one of them was drawne by his horse euen vnto the towne Trenches, who being searched, there were found about him eleuen Rose-nobles: an other was taken & brought neere the Towne, where he was slaine: there were also many footemen slaine with the Canon, in the meane time the enemye shott from the West part vpon the Towne, where they did no other hurt but strooke off a Souldiers arme.

The 30. of October no vessell went in nor out: the Towne was much indomaged by the great torment, who presently sought to repaire what had beene broken.



After dinner some Carts laden with Fagots, munition and victuals, were conducted towards the Forte which is at the East on the Downes: the enemy made some shott from the West against the *Porke-spike*, and from the East into the towne.

Traitors  
taken in  
the towne.

The same day some traitors were taken within the towne, of whom we will speake in another place.

The last of October there went no vessell in nor out.

The enemies laboured still behinde their Gabions, they of the towne shott vehemently vpon them from *Flammemburg* (a high Platforme so called being within the Towne): they without laboured also vpon the East at their new chanell, to make it deepe enough, for that the countrie is high in that place.

At foure of the clock in the afternoone, a great flote driuen with the Nor-west winde ouerthrew nine Gabions, which they without had planted to couer their labourers from the towne Canon, but for that they were tyed together with Cables, they remained in the same place.

The new battery on the East side vnder the downes, was all drownd, the tide hauing neuer beene so great on that side.

They discovered more Cartes laden with Bauins on the East part then the day before.

Vpon the South and South-east, the countrie was all couered with water aboue a league about, & all the trenches on the West vnder the Sand-downes, and towards the South and South-east were full of water, so as the enemie was forced to flie vp to their highest plat-formes and caualiers, the which they had to the number of eight along those trenches, in their retiring there



there were many of them stayed by the way by the Canon from the towne.

The enemy during this great water shott furiously vpon the *Porke-espike* to shake it, and to ouerthrow it, but they preuailed little more then the hurting of some Souldiers that were vpon it.

They of the towne ranne by troopes vpon the Rampars to see if the Sea and the violent winde would not carry away their Gabions, in the meane time the enemy shott at them but hurt no man.

The first of Nouember, the besieged began to re-  
paire that which the Sea had carried away of the *Porke-espike*.

They without were not seene to labour in any part, there were many volees of Musket shott on either side, but without any notable losse.

There was a *Germaine* brought prisoner into the towne, who was lame of halfe his body, and simple, they could drawe nothing from him but olde stale newes, that many of their Souldiers fled, that they were ill payde, and that there was great pouertie and many sicke in the campe.

They of the towne thought that the Block-house vpon the South should be carried away by the water, for that the enemy drew forth much wood out of their retrenchments.

The 2. of Nouember there went no shippe in nor out.

In the night the Arch-dukes men did lengthen their Gabions which are vpon the Goller with 30. others, at the end which is towards the South: and whereas



the first doe stretch from the South to the North, these leane something towards the East, to couer their workmen; the place where they are set is rough and somewhat high, the which helps them much, so as the Towne cannot discouer them in their workes: yet it is to be supposed they labour, for that the same day (the which was the first time) they did see horse-men in guard at the foote of the downes, by the new battery as if they had feared a Sallie.

They of the Towne thought that the enemy had other work then to charge them, they were farre besides their compt, for the Sea did euery day make new worke for them, their trenches vpon the West (which are right against the *Porke-espike*) were opened aboue forty yardes by the last tempest; so as the Gollet or mouth became daily, greater and larger, and did little harme vnto the Towne.

Before noone they shot little, presently after the Generall Sir *Francis Vere* came vpon the Spanish Boulwarke and to that of *Pekel*, commaunding them to shoote earnestly at the Gabions, which was the cause they spent some fifty shot sodainely.

The 3. of Nouember they of the Towne made a sallie of a 150. men as well leapers as souldiers, and seuen horse-men, who surprised the gabions & cut the cordes and Cables with the which they were tied, and ouerthrew some at the East end: in the meane time some of the enemies horse wēt towards the ruelin of the towne to cut off their way: the horse-men of the towne (whereof I haue spoken) seeing that, went to meet them with a 150. muskateers of the ruelin which is on the other side of the Gollet, before the bridge of their enemies side,  
who



who repulſed them: then they of the Towne gaue fire to the Canon, which ſlue ſiue men with one ſhot among thirty or forty which ſhewed themſelues a farre off to- wrades the new batterie: there was alſo a horſe-man and ſome ſouldiers ſlaine vpon the ravelin; during this encounter the enemies gathered together behinde the new batterie, there went forth three troupes of horſe againſt them of the Towne: As for the foote-men they ſkirmiſhed with them that firſt ſallied out of the towne: theſe three troupes with that which had beene chaſed came with a full carrire towards the ravelin of the Towne, but being come neere vnto the foote-men, they were beaten backe by them, and by the Canon from the Towne, which thundred furiouslye from the Spaniſh Boulewarke, and from that of *Pekel*, ſo as they returned as faſt as they came: and ſee- ing that they of the Towne had made hedde againſt them they retired behinde their battery, and they of the Towne did likewise retyre into their ravelin, In this ſkirmiſh there were foure of the Towne ſlaine & fix hurt, as for the enemies they loſt a good number, they of the Towne recouered ſixe or ſeuē Launces with banderolles, and among them the Cornet of Count *Aremberges* wherein were his armes: the enemy had gathered together another troupe of ſouldiers behinde their new battery, which durſt not ſhew them- ſelues neere, but retyred preſently, during which time they of the Towne ſent them many vollees of Canon.

As for the Gabions they were in verye badde eſtate, they did ſee through ſome part of them which were in ſingle ranke, others were ouerthrowne, and the enemies themſelues thinking that they of the



towne were hidden behinde them, shotte through them, and their Bullets came euen vnto the gollet, but they of the Towne found no man working there.

At noone the enemies transported much wood out of their Trenches into their Block-houses, and vpon the West they razed certaine Plat-formes, and carried away the Bauins to *Alberts-fort* and to his Block-house, whether it seemed they would retire themselves, and it was held for certaine, that a great part of the Souldiers had beene drawne out of the campe and sent into *Brabant* with a good number of the horse-men.

They of the towne made an other fallie, but the enemies did not abandon their forts, shewing themselves onely a farre of, so euery one keeping his advantage, there was nothing done.

At the same time a great and dangerous treason was discovered, the which was practised in the towne.

Great treason discovered in the towne.

An English-man named *N. Conisbye*, hauing serued the enemy long, and beene Captaine of a companie of foote in their armie, returned through *France* into *England*, where he preuailed so much (by meanes of his friends) as hee obtained Letters of commendation to Sir *Francis Vere* Generall of the English forces in *Ostend*. Hauing these Letters hee went to *Ostend*, and presented himselfe vnto Sir *Francis Vere*, desiring him to admit him of his company, at which the Generall could not refuse him, being a Gentleman. This traitor being thus crept into *Ostend*, began to play his part: he receiued letters



letters and other things weekly from the enemy, and gaue them intelligence what past within the towne, and of the meanes to annoy it, making his practises and proiects according to the instructions he receiued from them: To send his Letters to the enemy he carried them into a broken boate, the which in the beginning of the siege had beene sunke by the enemy, and was vpon the drye ground betwixt the Towne and the enemies Campe, making a shewe as if hee went to vntresse, knowing well the place where he should hide them: the enemy came at night to fetch them with a little Boate, and vpon certaine dayes brought him an answere to the same place: and sometimes money for his entertainment and his practises, the which he went to fetch in the same manner: When he was discouered, he had corrupted foure men, and amongst others a Sargent called *William N.* who reuealed it: This Sargent comming out of prison, where his Captaine had caused him to bee layde some dayes in Yrons, being all malcontent, mette by chance with this *Conisbye*, who sayde vnto him that hee was very glad to see him out of prison, and asked him what was the reason that he had so great and greeuous a punishment: to whom the Sargeant ( rayling vppon his Captaine ) sware earnestly that hee would be reuenged of the wrong he had receiued, although it should cost him his life: *Conisby* thinking to haue found a man fit for his purpose, said that there was good meanes without loosing of his life, but contrarywise he should make his profit and aduance himselfe, wherein he



might helpe him much , and if he would follow his counsell he should want no money. The Sergeant began to giue eare vnto his words, and seemed to be well affected to his desseigne , and to doe what he would aduise him. *Conisbye* (after he had made him to sweare not to reueale any thing that he should say , ) disco- uered himselfe vnto him, and presently asked him if he had the resolution , and would set fire of one of the Magazins of munition , with a certaine inuention of Poulder, of Leade, & of Match, the which the Sargent promised to doe , saying that it was very easie , for that he was often sent to fetch Poulder for the Soldiers; *Conisbye* sayd moreouer vnto him, that he had practised some others, and would haue more, to the number of twentie , and then would execute his desseigne in this manner. One of the Magazins being set on fire, he would worke so as he would haue the guard of a Sluce which is in one of the Bulwarkes of the towne, neere vnto the enemies Trenches , where they should giue the assault , and take the towne by that meanes : the Sargent made shew to like well thereof, demaunding onely of *Conisbye* a promise of his hand for the assurance of his recompence , when the worke should be done: hauing this promise, he goes presently to the Generall Sir *Francis Vere* , and discouers vnto him this practise: *Conisbye* being apprehended and put to the Racke, confesseth all, and that he came to *Ostend* with that intent, together with the instructions and promises he had from the enemy: his complices were likewise imprisoned.

The 4. of Nouember there were many volces spent of Musket shott and some of Canon.

The



The night before there went foorth fourteene faile, at whome they neuer shott, and not one came in.

The enemye this night raised a mount in the midst of their Gabions, the which is a long trenche of about 70. or 80. Gabions of rancke.

They also set Gabions at the two sides of their new batterie, which is at the foote of the Downes, and directly at the East of the trenche of their Gabions, sixe or seauen on the North-side, and towards the Sand-downes thirteene or foureteene to serue for blindes and to couer their men from the Towne Canon, who shotte very vphemently when as they did see day.

About noone an English-man went out of the trenches and yeelded himselfe to the enemye, it may be to carrie them newes of the imprisonment of his companions.

All that day the Canon and Muskets ceased not, yet was there not any man hurt in the towne.

The 5. of Nouember they of the towne shotte some fierie Bullets into the enemies Campe, and all the night was spent in Musket shot.

At night there went out one shippe, but none came in.

The enemye was busied to deface some plat-formes and trenches vpon the South and North parts, which the water had ouerthrowne, carrying the Bauins vnto the Downes and to their Block-houses.

About noone a horse-man entred into the Gollet of the towne, but as he went slowly seeming to be drunk, three or foure other horse-men followed him, and one  
amongst



amongst them (who had a great red scarfe about his neck) ouer-tooke him and gaue him many wounds with his Courtelas, and ouer-threw him, one of them tooke his horse, and so they returned to their trenches, leauing him for dead. Some of the towne hauing seene this, cast themselues into the gollet to swim and fetch him, but presently foure or fise of the enemies horse came, who tooke him and marched towards their quarter, but before they could recouer a place of safetie, they of the towne shott amongst them and ouer-threw one of them that carryed this Caualler, the rest fledde, leauing two dead for one.

The same day the aduenturers brought a prisoner into the Towne, whom they had taken betwixt *Bruges* and *Dixmude*, foure leagues from *Ostend*, who sayde that the regiment of *Count Frederic de Berg*, and some Ensignes of the *Counte de Bouquoy*, and *Fresin* were gone to succour *Hertzegenbusch* which his Excellencie had besieged: and that many of the Arch dukes Souldiers fled dayly, that they were ill payed, and had many that were sicke among them.

They without brought great store of Bauins and other wood, by the new Chanell of the East-side to the fort which is at the Downes.

The 6. of Nouember they shott furiously with stones into the towne.

In the morning they might see the Gabions towards the Northe of the new batterie ouer-throwne, so as they might see through them, there were onely foure standing the which were eriptie, and serued  
onely



onely to take away the sight that they might not shoot at their men: more-over they did see them transport great store of wood by the new Chanell towards the East.

In the after-noon they did see the enemy labour very earnestly behinde their Trenches and Gabions, at whome they of the Towne shotte some-times: they did also see them transport much Wood and Bauins, to the new Block-house at the Downes.

The prisoner of *Bruges* taken the day before, being examined, sayde, that at *Bruges* and throughout all Flanders they made them believe, that in *Ostend* they dyed by heapes, of hunger and thirst, and that many Souldiers forced by extreame necessity fled dayly: that there was nothing but mutinies and seditions in the Towne, and that the Arch-duke should haue them soone at his pleasure, and that no man durst deliuer any ill newes to the prejudice of the Arch-duke for feare of his life.

The sequenth of Nouember they without shotte no fierie Bullets, but onely many Stones into the Towne.

They laboured dayly behinde their Gabions upon the Gollet, although they of the town shott often: they began also a new *Corps de garde* in their new batterie, which is East-ward of the Downes behinde the Gabions and lookes to the bottome of the Gollet.

The 8: of Nouember they of the Towne did see the



emie labour very earnestly behinde the Gabions, some casting vp sand, others beating in piles, as if they would raise a Plat-forme to plant Canon thereon.

The enemies came neere vnto the halfe Moone of the Towne which is at the end of the bridge on the other side of the Gollet, but seeing them of the Towne issue forth to entertaine them with resolution, they returned after they had discharged some shot.

After dinner an Ensigne-bearer a Frison was slaine with a Musket shot being in the Polder.

They without shot stones into the Towne day and night.

The 9. day they shot many stones with their great Canon, yet they slue no man: in the night they raised their batterie which is vpon the North betwixt the *Cateyes* about three foote, and there made Canoniers to plant three peeces.

About 10. of the clocke at night there entered a Barke laden with Beere with a boate into the Gollet, the enemy shot furiously at them from their batteries on the downes and at the foote thereof, & likewise with their Muskets from their Gabions, which was the first time they shot from that place, yet the Barke entred happily without any harme.

They of the Towne discovered the fleete which was come from *Zeland*, who prepared to enter at night, the which did reioyce them very much, for there were three weekes that no vessell had entred.

The enemies according to their custome shot many stones into the Towne but did little harme.

The 10. of Nouember there entred 13. Ships by the Gollet, the enemy shot at them with his Canon, and  
with



With his Muskets from the Gabions, without hitting of man or Shippe, they onely shotte through some failes.

At night the enemies with their Barkes boarded two ships, the which they tooke and spoyled, and carried away the men that were in them.

There were many that laboured in the Gabions vpon the Gollet.

There was one ship had passed on two farre and staid before the Bulwarke of *Spaine*, the enemy shot all the day at it, their were 9. or 10. others had entred with it, but they had cast Anchor behinde the halfe Moone, which is vpon the Gollet for the defence of the bridge, and could not be hurt.

The plat-forme which the enemy had begunne behinde the Gabions, which are vpon the Gollet, did now appeare aboue them, and it seemed they would plant Canon thereon.

The 11. of Nouember, there were some of both parties which parled together betwixt the Gollet & them, but a Canon being discharged from the Towne euery one retired.

The Archdukes men laboured continually to finish the plat-forme behinde their Gabions, by meanes whereof they thought to stoppe the entrie of the shippes into the Towne, and held it for certaine that within fifteene dayes after this worke was perfect, the Towne was theirs: but they of the Towne found out a new secret, for the safe entrie and going foorth of their Shippes, and to make this infinite charge of the Arch-dukes fruitlesse.

The shippes which had remained the last night behinde



hinde the halfe Moone, entred this night into the hane,  
& there was no other losse in this goodly fleete of 52. or  
53. saile, but onely that which had beene on ground be-  
fore the Bulworke of Spaine, was shot through with  
the Canon.

Vpon the East-side, they did see about twēty five wa-  
gons laden with bauins and wood, come from the new  
chanell to the fort that is at the downes, and some from  
*Bredene*.

That day there was not any man slaine onely three  
or foure hurt.

The 12. of Nouember, they shotte many fire  
Bullets and stones of eyther side, with much small  
shot.

That night the Gouvernour called the Lorde of  
North, accompanied with Captaine *Rolle Grenu* and  
*Bronchaulx, dela Digne*, two Ministers, & two other men  
of the Towne went out with two shippes for their con-  
uoy to go into *Zeland*.

They might see vpon the high plat forme which the  
enemy had made behinde the Gabions, foure Canon-  
ers to plant Canon at, to stop the entry and going out  
of the ships, for the effecting whereof they wrought all  
they could, else they shot little.

The night of the 13. day they shot not; in the morning  
they saluted one another with their Muskets.

The enemy laboured still at their battery behinde the  
Gabions, making it higher and larger, and neglected  
their other workes.

They made a great Corps de garde neere vnto *Albert*  
fort, although that both within it and at the foote

of



of the downes there were many faire houses.

About noone they discovered a great fire in *Albert* fort, & they said it was fire fallen from Heauen, it burnt so violently as it could not possibly be quenched: there was lost for 150000. Florins in Jewels: the Estates of *Flanders* to repaire this losse made a present of a 100000. Crownes to the Arch-duke.

The Shippe which had beene three dayes before on ground in the Gollet before the Bulworke of Spaine, entred at night into the Towne Ditch, the enemy made ten or twelue shot at it but could not hitte it.

The enemies whole hope for the taking of the Towne, was to stoppe the entrie of ships, they thought to haue effected their desseigne by meanes of their new plat-forme which they made behinde the Gabions, but they of the Towne made a new Hauen, the which is not much commaunded by the plat-forme, & by that means the enemies hope vanished to smoake. The Arch-dukes trenches vpon the west-side were neglected and fell daily, and the water from the Sea increased so in the West Gollet, as at this day it is a deepe and goodly ditch.

The  
townsmen  
make a  
new Ha-  
uen.

The 14. of Nouember at night the Canons and muskets shot vehemently on either side: and in the night there went out 7. or 8. ships, but the enemy neuer shot at them.

They without laboured continually at their battery vpon the Gollet, making strong defences there: and they of the Towne were busied about their new Hauen.

After dinner two of their souldiers that were within



within the halfe Moone vpon the gollet fled to theemie : and presently fve or fixe horsemen came from their batterie at the Gabions to receiue them, and at the same instant they began to shoote at the towne, and at those that wrought in the halfe Moone, yet they hurt no man: they might then easily discerne fve Canoniers in their batterie.

The Arch-duke had beene in person at the Campe vpon the West, where he had changed some quarters and garrisons ; they of the towne shott at the Souldiers as soone as they appeared vpon the trenches.

There was more Canon-shot that day then the foure before, but more from the towne then without, there were but three hurt in the towne, and not one flaine.

The 15. of Nouember being darke they shott a little on both sides to entertaine the custome, and in the night the enemy shott great stones.

That night there went 18. or 20. ships out of the Haueu, but none entred, the enemy shott much after them and killed two Marriners and a Boye.

The enemy laboured continually at their batterie of Gabions, and at that which is betwixt the *Careyes*, but they did not yet open their Canoniers.

The enemy shot against the Mill which is vpon the Bulwarke of *Flammenburg*, the Bullet strooke of a *French-mans* legge, and all the flesh off the other, so as he was little better then dead. He was scarce retired from thence, but another Bullet strooke in the same place, which stayed there and did no harme.

That day there was not any one but this *Frenchman* hurt in the towne, & an other a little hurt in the legge.  
The



The 26. of Nouember ( by reason of the contrarie winde ) no ship went out of the towne, there entred an English man at whom the enemye made some Canon shott, but more store of Musket from their batterie which is vpon the Gollet, yet they hurt no man.

They without laboured still at their batterie vpon the gollet, but they did nothing that day in their other batteries.

They shot whotly for halfe an houre vpon the towne of the West side, some thought it was for the coming of some Noble-men; others that it was by the intelligence of a fugitiue, who had fled to them the night before: after dinner they shott also at *Flammenbourg* but hurt no man.

A *French-man* fled out of the towne vnto the enemye, who ( to escape ) thrust himselfe into the gollet vp to the neck.

The 17. of Nouember the enemye shott many great stones into the towne.

About midnight the enemye sent from the West part some horse-men into the olde towne and carried away three prisoners, at the same time from their batterie of *Reisern-haubt* they cast some planks ouer the Hauen, whereas it is narrowest at a lowe water, on the which there passed 30. men into the olde towne, from whence they were presently repulsed with the canon.

An English-man seeking to flie vnto the enemye, was presently taken and hanged.

Also a French Gentleman disobeying his Sargent and making a great tumult, was committed to prison, and eight dayes after condemned by the councell of warre to be shott. But for that he was borne of a good



house, all the *French* Captaines entreated Generall *Vere* to giue him his life, the which he granted, vpon condition, that he should aske the Sargent forgiuenesse, the which he would by no meanes doe, notwithstanding any perswasions: wherevpon they gaue him eight dayes to resolue with himselfe; which being past, and he still obstinate, he was brought to the place of execution and tied to a stake: but when as he did see the Harguebuziers readie to shoote, he began to haue horror of death, intreating that he might be vnbond, promising to performe the sentence, and to aske the Sargent forgiuenesse, the which he did presently and was deliuered.

That day the enimie was not seene to labour in any place, nor to carry Fagots from the new Chanell of the East.

The Plat-forme vpon the Gollet is right against the *Cateye* of the Towne, betwixt the Bulwarke of *Pekel* and the East-Port, where before there were neither Rampars nor defences: they of the Towne (to couer themselves from the enemies Canon) planted Gabions, so as the enimie could not pierce them, and if the Bullets flew ouer, then they went into the West quarter among their owne Souldiers.

That night came in an English ship with a hundred Tunne of Beere, the which entred into the towne being Moone-light, the enimie shott at them from their batteries.

The same night the enimie laboured at their batterie of the North, betwixt the *Cateyes*, and did raise it with sand, leauing their Canoniers still shut.

The 18. the enemies shott stones and flints into the  
towne,



towne, and the besieged exchanged fierie Bullets with them.

At the breake of day they without laboured at their batterie of Gabions, making it higher and larger, neither did they shoo nor labour in any other quarter.

In the afternoone they began to labour in one of their trenches on the West part, but they of the towne hauing shot some volets of Canon at them, scattered them presently.

At night there went two ships out of the towne for England, but none came in.

The same night a Spanish Auncient came and yeelded himselfe into the towne, (who (as he said) had slaine a Sargent: he affirmed that there were 3000. men gone out of the Campe into *Brabant*, and that his Highnesse had sent new commissions into *Arthois* and *Haynault* to leaue 3000. men, that the Canon from the towne did euery day much spoile in the Campe: and that they were yet 6000. men before the towne: that is, two regiments of *Spaniards*, three of *Italians*, and one of the *Wallons*, comprehending the garrisons of the Fortes: that it was now twentie dayes since the Souldiers receiued a penny, and before the Souldiers had receiued but 14. Stivers in 16. dayes. He said also that when as the Fort of *Albert* was burnt, his Highnesse had lost aboue 60000. Duckets in Jewels and other things, and that the Elemmings had made him a goodly present in recompence of this losse: he said moreover that the Captaines durst not eate in the sight of the Souldiers for feare of a mutinie, This Souldier had a memoriall of the siege of *Ostend* in the *Castilian* tongue, out of which was taken that which



followes, the which many serue to the History, and happily may be pleasing to the reader

The Spaniardes are very much discontented, for that the Arch-duke continues the siege of *Ostend*, and aboue all for that he hath cast and dismist so many olde experimented Captaines and men of command which did dissuade him, and hath put yong men into their places. That there was a great number of Captaines & men of commaund dead, and that the regiment of *Don Jean de Braebamonte* ( which had beene 1500. men strong) was brought to lesse then 900. The Captaines say that the Arch-duke is good for nothing but to spoile souldiers, and to wast the number of good and honorable men: for that he vnderstands nothing in the arte of warre, the which doth much grieue the souldiers that are there: who ( among other things ) are beaten with three enemies, hunger, colde, and sicknesse, and are not paied, that for many dayes they haue receiued but 25. stiners, and feare they shall receiue lesse hereafter. That the Flemmings (and especially they of *Bruges*) cannot or will not contribute any more for the enter-tainment of the army, and that the bruite was, they should haue no more munition Bread nor Beere, and that instead thereof, for two stiners which they were accustomed to receiue, they should haue five a day: the which seemed very strange vnto the Spaniardes: They say also that the commissaries and vndertakers of the ammunition and victuals do make them lesse and falsifie them dayly, especially the beere of *Bruges*, who (when the vessel is halfe out) fill it vp with water, the which was a signe that the Spaniards had a desire to mutine if they paid them not money. They saide also that there

were



were dead at this siege foure Colonels, eight Spanish Captaines, ten Wallons, and nine Italians, and some Germanes and Flemmings, with some thousandes of souldiers, all men of commaund, and workemen, and that it is a pittifull thing to see how the new Spaniardes and Italians, died miserably for colde and other discomforties.

The 19. of Nouember, they shot little; after dinner they might see plainly how the enemies defaced their trenches to haue wood to burne: there was no speech of any hurt in the Towne that day.

At night their armed 5. ships, the enemy shot much at them, as well from the downes as from their battery at the Gollet, yea with their Muskets from the Gabions, but did them no harme.

The 24. of Nouember, the Arch-dukes men shot more Canon and Musket then they had done in eight dayes before, the which they returned them from the Towne in the same money.

At the breake of day there were two souldiers slaine, and some others hurt with the Canon, from the West part.

From the morning vntill noone they might see a great number of Wagons passe into the West, betwixt the forts of *Isabella* and *La pierre S. Iean*, and likewise to the East behinde the caufie of *Bredene*: yet the enemy wrought not in any place.

They of the Towne were not slothfull in working at the new port and at the Bulworke of *Pekel*.

In the night an English Corporall was taken who had hidde himselfe in the darke, for some ill designe.



Two great barkes went out of the Hauen and none entred.

The 25. of Nouember, the enemy neuer ceased from night to the morning to shoote great stones and fire Bullets, so as two houses were set on fire, but they were presently quenched.

At night Captaine *Poelgeest* died suddainely beeing well at noone.

The Wagons went still to the East and West, yet the enemy wrought not in any place,

At night there went 21. ships out of the Towne, at whom the enemy shot 7. or 8. vollees of Canon, yet he hit not any, there entred none into the Hauen.

The 26. at the breake of day there was much shooting on either side for two houres, and then they ceased.

They without ceased not to worke at their batterie on the Goller: and they of the Towne omitted no time to worke at their new Hauen, and at the Bulworke of *Pekel* and defences thereof, and at the East-port.

After dinner they might see many Wagons going towards the Sand downes in the East, towards night the Canon plaied on either side a while, & then great store of Musket shot.

A little before night the enemy shot furiously with stones, and soone after ceased, there were two only hurt that day.

In the night there went fifteene shippes out of the Port, at whom the enemy did not shoote, & not any one came in.

The 27. of Nouember in the morning, foure ships entred



Entered the Gollet, whereof two were laden with fresh fish, the enemy shotte at them, but could not hitte them.

The enemy wrought this day vppon the West-downes, and in their batterie vpon the Gollet, yet not so much as they had done before, neither did they worke any where els.

That day Captaine *Poelgeest* was honourably interred.

The 28. of Nouember being the day of the feast of *S. Elizabeth*, (according to the auncient Calender which they vse in England) Sir *Francis Vere* Generall of the English, caused all the Canons of Towne to be shot off in honour of the Queene of England. by their example, the enemye did as much in honour of the Infanta *Isabella*, and there was hard such a noyse and thundring, as if there had beene a generall alarme both within and without, which being done they were quiet all the morning.

This was  
on the 17.  
of No-  
uember  
filio veteris

In the meane time the townsmen ceased not to worke in their new Hauen, and at the Gabions betwixt the Bulworke of *Pekel* and the East Port.

The enemy was not seene to worke in any place, which made them beleue that they were troubled to defend themselves from colde, and to keepe their souldiers from flying.

The Counsell of warre of the English caused a thiefe to be hanged, and his companion to be whipt, whome they intreated not so rigorously, by reason of his youth.

At night they of the Towne shot fire Bullets into the enemies Campe, who sent them backe againe



many stones , yet was there not any one hurt in the towne.

The 29. of Nouember the enemy began early in the morning to shoote stones into the towne.

They might see them conduct many Wagons towards the Fortes which are vpon the Downes at the East and West , betwixt the Forts of *Isabella*, *Albert*, and *La Pierre S. Iean*.

Sicknesse  
in the  
towne.

There rained a strange disease in the towne, of the which they that were strooke eyther died or were cured betwixt the morning and night , there dyed many thereof, but there was no speech of any that was flaine or hurt in the towne that day.

The Arch-duke and the Infanta went for foure- teene dayes to *Bruxelles*.

That night there went no vessell in nor out.

The 30. of Nouember at the break of day the flug- gards were awaked with Canon and Musket shott, which played furiously on eyther side.

The enemy made some Canon-shott in the day time, where-with they killed two Souldiers and hurte some others.

The enemies Canon giuing some intermission they lost neither the occasion nor the time , but continued their workes at their new Hauen , as also at the halfe Moone which is vpon the gollet neere vnto the batte- rie of the enemies Gabions, the which was made so strong , as it was almost incredible ; and though it be in an open place , and at the mouth of the enemies Canon, yet could they neuer winne it . They haue gi- uen two assaults , and sought to be maisters thereof, ~~even~~ in the beginning when it was made , but they haue



haue beene still repulst with great losse of their men, and were forced to leaue it.

That night no shippe went in nor out of the Towne.

The first of December at night the enemies played vehemently with their Muskets into the Towne, and they discharged their Canon three times in the honour of S. *Andrew* patron of the house of *Bourgonne*.

The enemies Trenches, ( the which at euery spring tide were full of water, ) by the which they might haue gone couered from one plat-forme vnto an other, being eight in all, were almost all ouer-throwne, so as they were forced to shew themselves as they passed, and the Canon from the towne spared them not.

Vpon the West they might see their Wagons part from the Forte of *Albert*, *Isabella*, and *La pierre S. Jean*, and returne with all kinde of victualles from *Bruges*, for that they could not bring it by water, the chanell being frozen.

In the night the enemies set fire on their thirtie fūe Gabions which were vpon the Goller, for they serued them now to no vse, and they had placed them there but onely to couer their labourers whilst they wrought at the plat-forme, the which was a high worke, and almost perfected, whereon they might plant seauen or eight Canons.

The 2. of December, a Souldier of the Towne fled and went to theemie: two Marriners were slaine by the East-port, and a Harguebuzer in the West.

The Townes-men shott almost all night into the



enemies campe, who answered them not, the which made them imagin that they wanted Poulder.

The same night 14. ships went out of the Port without any annoyance. There were two English Barkes laden with Beere which would haue entred, but they ranne on ground, yet by the helpe of some other ships they returned in safetie to the fleete,

The 3. of December at the breake of day, the Muskets played furiously on either side, after that, the enemy played with his Canon into the towne, but they would not be long indebted vnto them.

Some that had gone out to the warres returned that day; they had taken two *Wallons* prisoners, who were so obstinate and wilfull as they would not marche, so as the Souldiers were forced to kill one, and to bring the other into the towne vpon their neckes, after that they had vsed him in the worst sort they could: for Generall *Vere* had commanded them expressely to bring some one to learne newes of the enemy: but this man was yet so wilfull, as neither for threats, faire words, nor any other deuise, they could drawe any thing from him, but in cursing with iniurious wordes, he sayd that his Highnesse would not leaue the Towne before hee had brought it to his will.

They could not see the enemy worke in any place; but the Townes-men ceased not at their new Porte, the Bulworke of *Pekel*, and the defences betwixt it and the East-port: and although the enemy shot little, yet the Townes-men abated nothing.

The night before the fourth of December, the two English shippes (whercof we spake before) entred



tered into the Towne, it was a bright Moone-light, and the enemies shott hard at them yet could not hurt them.

At the same time when as these ships entered, fire tooke a house at the East-port, and for that this house was in the right-vp-street, and a great concourse of people comming to quench it, the enemy shott continually at them, and yet there were but three souldiers and a Boye slaine, and the fier in the ende was quenched.

The night was quiet enough, without any great shooting on eyther side, vntill about three of the clocke, that the enemies came in great numbers to giue an assault vnto the English trenches, in three diuers places, during the which (being about an houre) they shott furiously on either side: the enemies cryed ~~so lowde~~ in French; Enter, enter, aduance, aduance, as they heard them easily into the Towne: they were chearefully receiued and valiantly repulsed three times, and in the ende were forced to retire. There were three Souldiers of the Towne slaine, and some hurt: as for the enemy, we cannot well knowe how many were slaine, it was so darke: But day being come, they found so much bloud vpon the place, as they did iudge a great number to be slaine and hurt, and they might heare them say in returning one vnto another: Companions let vs carry away our Captaine: here is no good to be gotten. Generall Vere hearing the alarme, ranne to those Trenches halfe naked, his presence did so incourage the Souldiers, as they wished that the enemy would returne againe.

Assault at  
the Eng-  
lish Tren-  
ches, and  
repulsed.



The enemy in the morning beganne for the first time to shoote from their batterie which is at the West vpon the *Cateyes*, and shot three or foure times through the *Blindes* or couerings.

The leapers brought in a prisoner of the Country of *Luxembourg*, who said that he was seruant vnto the *Cont Barlemont*.

The night before the 5. day of December, the townsmen shot many Stones and fire Bullets into the enemies Campe, who shot not vntill the morning when as they plaid furiously from the West, and pearced some houses without any great harme.

They also made many a shot against the *Generalles* house, and beate downe a pane of a wall, and before it carried away a French Auncients legge, whereof he died soone after.

They of the Towne laboured at their defences betwixt *Pekel* and the East Port, and at their new *Hauen*.

That night there entred two shippes; in the one of them was the commissarie *Doublet* who brought fifty thousand crownes for the workemen, the which are commonly souldiers who gaine very much.

Yesterdaies prisoner saide among other things that the Sunday before, the souldiers had mustred vpon the East; and insteede of two stivers which they receiued, they promised the 5. but for that they were ill paid the two, they had lesse hope of the fine, and that many fled away dayly and many died, and that within three daies they had found three souldiers frozen to death in one lodging.

The enemy shot vehemently that day from their  
new



new battery betwixt the *Cateyes* and *Reisern-heubt*; they pearced some houses in the top, & shot against Sand-hill the which seemed to them of the Towne a meere follie, for if they had spent 10000. Canon shot against this Bulworke and the rest, they should haue auailed themselves little or nothing at all.

The 6. of December it chanced (the tide being low) two of the enemies souldiers came to the bancke of the Gollet on the East-side, to whom two souldiers of the Towne shewed them selues on the other side, all of a good humour, without any will to hurt one another, who parled friendly together: the enemies asked them of the Towne what they thought of the plat-forme which was vpon the Gollet, and whether they of the Towne could hereafter receiue in any victualles, with such like discourses: whereunto the Townsmen answered, that they little regarded that plat-forme, for that there was a new Hauen made, to vse when need should require: and that they looked to receiue daylie store of victualles and other things necessarie: and besides that, they had yet store of prouision for a long time of good Wine and good English Beere, and better cheape then in the Campe; well said the others, we will go & drinke with you, looke you vse vs well: hereupon a horseman of the enemies came, still crying after his companions, who retyred, saying, we recommend you vnto God vntill our next meeting.

In the morning they might perceiue 400. Wagons going towards the East, but the enemy was not seene to worke in any place.

They without, brake and burnt all their Gabions which were vpon the Gollet, whereas all the plat-forme

M

appeared



appeared plaine, and there might they see some loope hoales.

The Townsmen shot all night with fire Bullets into the Campe, and the enemy likewise into the Towne, wherewith there was a woman slaine and her husband hurt.

The 7. of December both morning and evening they shot fire Bullets and stones of eyther side; in the morning there were some of the towne hurt, & amongst the rest Sir *Horatio Veres* Secretary had his legge shot off.

They without, shot furiously into the Towne from their battery which they haue raised at the foote of the downes, vpon the end of the dike on the East-side, as neere the Towne as might be, where they had planted three peeeces.

At night Sir *Horatio Veres* Secretary (hauing his leg cut off) died.

The 8. of December in the morning they of the Towne beganne to play with two whole Canons and three demies, against the enemies new worke, the which they had raised betwixt the *Cateyes* and *Reisern-haubt*, which sport continued aboue two houres. In the meane time the enemy shot violently into the Towne from their other batteries of the west, most part wherof lighted vpon the houses, which the Townsmen little regarded, being acquainted therewith.

Besides they might see them without, labour carefully vpon the downes, to make a new trench of wood to goe from one battery to another.

In the night, two Barkes went out and one came in, with a little shaloup at whome the enemy shot hard,  
but



but could not hit them: this was the first time they shotte from their batterie which is vppon the Gullet.

There entred likewise a shaloupe by the North-Hauen, into the which there came a Canon shotte from the West, which carryed away a Marriners arme: They shotte much on eyther side yet few were hurt.

The night before the 9. day there were many stones and fire Bullets shot off either side, according to the custome: & some Bullets passed through the houses: a Burgesse found in his celler in the morning three canon Bullets the which had made a great noise and broken all thereabouts.

The night before the tenth of December, after they had staied of eyther side, at midnight they began to shoote many stones and Musket shot vntill the morning.

In the night they of the Towne heard their enemies labouring vpon their new plat-forme in the East, to beate in and cut, as if they had driuen in some piles, and had planted more Canon.

After noone a Marriner entred by the North Hauen in a shaloupe, who was come from England, and had brought a vessell full of goods, the enemy shot at him but could not reach him: He saide that hee had hard reported at Sand-witch by Flemmings that were good and credible men, and did assure it for certaine, that the fire which had beene lately in *Alberts* fort came from heauen, and had taken first in the Arch-dukes lodging.

The 11. of December as the day before, the enemies



were busied to deface their olde workes and Ramparts vpon the South and South-west, to haue Wood to burne, the Townes-men shott sometimes at them with their Canon.

They shott also from their new batterie vpon the Gollet, into the Towne and vpon the Hauen, to trie their Canon, without dooing of any great harme, there were but three hurt that day in the towne, and without danger of death.

The night before the 12. of December they began againe to shoote stones and fierie Bullets, vntill midnight without any great effect.

In the night a little Boate went from the towne to the Fleete, to fetch from the English ship (whereof hath beene spoken) certaine sheepe and liue hogges, and returned into the towne, beating the hogges to make them gront, to spight the enemies, who shott after them yet could not hit any.

In the morning the enemy shott into the towne, and at the Bulworke of *Pekel*, from their batteries of *Cateyes* and the Downes.

The 13. of December there entred a Barke laden with fresh fish into the Towne, at whom the enemies made two shott but could not hurt him.

Captaine *Gisbrecht Kolbe* of *Bruges*, dyed of a burning feuer, hauing beene sick only two dayes.

It was such a miste that day, as they could scarce see from the towne vnto the enemies trenches.

There was a Canonier slaine, and no man else hurt.

The 14. of December from the beginning of the night vnto the morning, they shott fierie Bullets and stones on either part, with ordinary Bullets through  
the



the houses: the Gouvernours house was shott through at noone day, yet no man was hurt.

In the night a ship of *Vlissingue* went out of the Hauen, at whom the enemy shot not.

In the after-noone the enemy changed his guardes, at whom the besieged shott as soone as they might discover them.

The 15. of December (according to the custome of warre) they shott of both sides, but there was no man flaine nor hurt within the towne.

At night three shippes went out of the Hauen, and were nothing indomaged by the enemy, who shott at them.

The 16. in the beginning of the night the enemy battered in ruine, and shott some fierie Bullets into the towne.

In the night the enemies brought before the towne three great Barkes full of stones and sand, with an intention (during the darknesse) to sinke them in the gollet: and so to stoppe the passage of the shippes: but this devise succeded not: the Barkes were cast directly against the olde Towne where they ranne a ground.

The morning was so darke as they could not discern what the enemy did, but about noone the water being lowe, the enemies began to playe with their Muskets and Canon-shott into the towne, yea vpon the three Barkes that were runne on ground, whether they of the Towne were gone to see what was in them: their Horse-men came likewise (having past through the Hauen) and chased them of the Towne away three times, so as they were forced to



leauē them and to attend more water.

The 17. of December the enemy shott many stones into the Towne. The same day, one of the enemies horse-men being drunke, came to the halfe-Moone of the towne ( which is vpon the gollet; ) and intreated them to lead him to his quarter: they in the halfe-Moone slue his horse, and ( to be short ) tooke him prisoner.

Vpon the West side, two *Italiens* ( standing Sentinell, ) were taken and brought prisoners into the towne.

The three Barkes ( whereof we did speake ) were this night beaten in peeces by them of the Towne, and the greatest part of the wood carried in.

In the after-noone the besieged shott against their enemies batterie vpon the *Cateyes*, and towards the East vpon the enemy that was come downe vpon the Sands, the Sea being gone: of whom they slue some, and the rest fled. There was one man slaine in the towne, and three hurt.

The 18. of December in the morning, a ship went out of the Hauen, at whom the enemy made three shott but hit it not.

After noone they of the Towne seeing the enemies change their guards, shott at them.

The prisoners that were taken yesterday, said that their men had no opinion nor courage to take the towne by assault: and that their onely hope was in time to stop the comming in and going out of the ships.

At night there went out two ships, and the enemy neuer shott at them. The enemy shott fierie Bullets and stones at the towne vntill midnight.

The



The 19. day in the morning being faire, there went a Barke out of the Hauen, at whom they shot from the batterie that is vpon the Goller, but hurt them not: after noone they shotte no more on eyther side.

The 20. day they of the towne shot furiously against a Block-house, where they did see the enemy working, and amongst the guards when they changed: the enemy shotte so little this day and the day before, as there was no man slaine in the Towne, but some hurt.

The 21. of December at the breake of day the tide being spent, the Arch-duke gaue a furious assault to the olde Towne, with 700. or 800. men, the which continued well two houres.

An assault  
giuen, and  
the enemy  
repulsed  
with losse.

The assailants with a certaine artificiall fire burnt the Palissadoes, but they within (the alarime being giuen) played with their Canon and Musket through the troopes; so as the water rising, the enemies were forced to retire to their trenches, without getting any thing, but leauing behinde them many slaine and hurt: they of the Towne issued forth, and among other prisoners brought in a Spanyard, a man of command, who being examined by the Generall, said, that the truth was, the Arch-duke his Lorde, had taken occasion to presse the Towne by the weaknesse of the Garrison, and small number of Souldiers that were in it; and that of long time they had receiued no refreshing of Souldiers and victuals, whereof he had certaine intelligence: that to this end his Highnesse without loosing any more time, had gathered together as many Souldiers as possiblie



he could, out of *Brabant*, *Arthois*, *Hannault* and other places, and had brought to the number of ten thousand men, being resolved to assault it, in diuers places, the which he did hope to take by Christmas, & it might chance before, if occasion were offered. The Generall hauing fully vnderstoode the confession of this prisoner, and knowing that it was true, for that a little before he had receiued the like aduice from diuers places, being conformable there vnto, and with all that he had made triall of the weakenesse of his men in this last assault, and that he had not souldiers sufficient to man all the places of the Towne, & to defend them; he thought it fit, (to breake of the enemies desleigne, and to auoid this danger, and also to gaine some time) to entertaine him with a vaine hope, and vnder colour of composition, to spend some dayes in parle, not doubting but to draw it so out in length, vntill the succors which he expected were ariued: at the least he should haue sometime to set his men in order; and in the meane time to prepare al things necessary for the defence of the place: for this reason he sends Captaine *Lewis* to the Campe, to make a motion for a peace, & to demand a truce & cessation of armes, during the conference, & for assurance therof hostages to be giuen of both sides. Captaine *Lewis* (hauing had a good audience of the Arch-duke, & deliuered all that he had in charge, retournes vnto the towne with his answer, & on his highnes behalfe there came with him Captaine *Ribas* Governour of *Escluse* a Towne in *Flanders*, and the Sargeant *Maier* of the Spaniards, to remaine in Hostage for assurance of the treaty. At their first comming there was some disorder among the souldiers for want of well vnderstanding: especially

A treatie  
with the  
Arch-duke  
to winne  
time.



pecially among the *Romans* or new *Gueens* (these are they which yeelded vp *S. Andrews* fort to Prince *Maurice*, in the Ile of *Bornel*, and turned to his seruice in the yeare 1600.) which caused an alarme in the Towne, so as the deputies or Hostages retired to the Campe: a while after this trouble being pacified, Generall *Vere* sent two English Captaines againe vnto the Campe with whom those men (before mentioned) returned, to treat on the Archdukes behalfe with them of the Towne. The Generall propounded vnto them (as they said) articles very impertinent and without reason, that is. That he would depart with coulors flying and full armes, and that the souldiers should carry away their baggage, victual and Canon, moreouer he demanded a maruelous great some of mony for the souldiers, and some dayes of respight, that they might (at their ease) shippe their goods and Canon, and carry them away. *Ribas* made many iournies to know his Highnesse pleasure, who yeelded to most part of the articles, but he would by no meanes heare of giuing any money to the souldiers, and would haue them go away by Land, offering to giue them a Conuoy to *Breszkins*, right against *Flusingue*, or neere vnto it, to passe at their pleasures into *Zeland*,

On the other side they of the Towne would not go from their first articles, onely they yeelded something in that which concerned the Canon and armes. And so three dayes weere spent in these parlies.

During this treaty and cessation of armes, many inhabitants of *Bruges* and other places both of the East and West side, walking along the Sea side, came neere vnto the Towne, and talked with the Townsmen who

N

shewed



shewed themselves vnarmed vpon the Rampars.

The 22. of December Generall *Vere* was all day busied in disposing of his guard, and in setting a better order among the Souldiers, to endure a new assault if the enemy had charged them: the enemy was also all the day in armes and changing of his guardes, which was the cause they began to shoote againe on either side.

There came from the Fleete into the Haven 32. sayle, at whom the enemy shott from foure batteries, yea from that which is vpon the Gollet, but the greatest harme they did, was to shoote through some of them, yet all the marchandise and euery thing within them was safe.

They of the Towne laboured continually in the new Haven, without any intermission, no not in the night.

The night before the 23. of December, the enemy shott much vpon the towne, and battered it in ruine.

The same night there entred two small Barkes into the towne without any harme.

After midnight being a lowe water, Generall *Vere* went forth in person with two Captaines more with him into the olde towne, to visit it and to view the situation, and went the round, encouraging the Souldiers and commanding them to keepe good guard.

In the morning they began to shoote on eyther side: the enemy shott much at the three ships which had beene pierced.

During the treatie their Highnesses shewed themselves before the Towne within Canon shott: the *Infanta* was vpon the neereſt Mountaines of Sande, with



with twentie Ladyes and Gentlewomen in her traine, and the Arch-duke with many Gentlemen, and the guardes of his body, being so neere as one might easily discerne them, the which was also confirmed by the Gouvernour of *Escluse*, that their Highnesses were come thether vnder the assurance of the truce.

Herevpon the 25. of December being Christmas day, a fleete of Shippes of Zeland came before the Towne, in the which besides all other kindes of prouision, there were five Ensignes of Zelanders which made 600. men and 300. Marriners, the which entered into the Towne at diuers times in long boates and Shaloups by the North entrie or midle hauen at noone day in view of the enemy, who shot at them from the foure batteries of East and West without ceasing, and yet did no other harme but onely hurt three Marriners: by this meanes the treatie was broken off: and they sayd vnto the Gouvernour of *Escluse*, that he must returne to the Campe, for that the cause of this treatie ceased, by the arriual of these succours, whereat he was much amazed, growing in choller for that they had reteined him there for nothing, and vsing some iniurious wordes, hee mainteined that there were no Souldiers arriued, but onely some munition and victuals, vntill that Captaine *Potter* (who came with the Fleete, and whom he knew well) was brought before him, and assured him that it was so: About noone the Gouvernour of *Escluse* was ledde out of the Towne, and two houres after, one of the English Captaines returned for him into the Towne, and hauing sent backe the Satgent-Major of the Campe a



Spaniard, the other English Captaine returned in like sort: this done there was great ioy in the Towne for their happy and vnexpected deliuerie, Generall *Vere* sending backe the Sargeant *Maior*, charged him with a letter to the Arch-duke of his excuses, as followeth.

**W**Ee haue heretofore held it necessary for certaine reasons to treat with the deputies which had authority from your highnes, but whilst we were about to conclude vpon the conditions & articles, there are ariued certaine of our ships of war, by whom we haue receiued part of that which we had neede of, so as wee cannot with our honour and oath continue the treaty, nor proceede in it, the which we hope your Highnesse will not take in ill part, and yet when your power shall reduce vs to the like estate you will not leaue (as a most generous Prince) to giue vs a gentle audience.

*From our Towne of Ostend the 25.  
of December. 1601.*

*Signed. F. Vere.*

**T**HE 26. of December, after that these spectators which did attend another issue of the businesse had beene refused, they began againe the warre more cruelly then before, the enemy battred in ruine aboue the plat-forme which is vpon the Gollet, but the besieged were so acquainted with it that they cared not for it.

The same day there entred 48. saile laden with victualles, munition of warre and other things necessarie, by the Gollet into the Towne, the enemies Canon hurt  
but



but two ships, the which notwithstanding were saued, and other of them by the indiscretion of the *Pilot* ranne a ground on the enemies side, the which was spoiled and burned by them.

All this time they kept strong and good gard.

It seemed the enemy had a meaning to giue an other assault vnto the Towne, for this cause there was good garde kept and the gardes doubled, and all things fitt to maintaine an assault held in a readinesse, but they attempted nothing, for that the enemies desseigne had been broken for this time, by the meanes of this parley, during the which the succors ariued.

The 27. of December, the enemy began againe to shoote stones and firy bullets, and they of the Towne sent them their exchange presently.

The same day there came foureteene saile into the Towne, at whome the enemy made aboue sixtie Canon shotte, but did them little harme, onely one barke laden with turffes, ranne a ground vpon the East port, against the Sea dike, at the which the enemy shotte vehemently, and beat it almost in peeces, yet all the turffes were saued: So within fve or fixe dayes there entred forty eight shippes into *Ostend*, whereof three onely were lost by the ill conduct of the Pilots: And on Christmas day there entred at the least 400. long boats & shaloupes with souldiers, & the most of them in the day time, the which the enemy could not hinder with their foure batteries of the East and West.

They expected also in the Towne a greater number of souldiers to fortifie the Garison the which gaue them more courage and assurance.

The 28. at night there went two ships out of *Ostend*, at



whom the enemy shot but he could not reach them. The same night there entred 200. Marriners into the Towne to fortifie the Garison.

The enemy planted 12. or 13. Gabions vnder the downes, right against the west Port, where before there had bin a battery of two Canons, the which was partly mouldred away, & partly beaten down with the towne Canon. About noone a wagon went from *Albert* fort to the *Cattyes*, they which seemed to be well laden, about the which there were some horsmen; they of the towne made two shot at them from Sand-hill, which did beate the Wagon in peeces and scattered the horsmen.

The 29. the enemy began againe to shoote with firy Bullets & stones, the which they had not done in some dayes past.

At night there went forth 4. ships, at whom the enemy made some shot from their battery which is vpon the Gollet, but did not hurt them: an Italian beeing in gard was taken by the necke & brought into the towne, who said that the greatest part of the men of warre were retyred, and that there remained no more in the Campe but what was necessary for the ordinary gardes the which was false, as appeared afterwards. A horsman of the enemies ( the water being low, ) entred into the olde Towne, and tooke a Sargeant prisoner, but a Musketier shot so well after him as he killed his horse betwixt his legs, & by this meanes freed the Sargeant, the horsman notwithstanding saued himselfe, and the saddle was brought into the Towne.

The enemy planted on two broken batteries at the West, vpon either a Canon, with the which they shot against the *Porke-espike* and Sand-hill, the which they  
of



of the Towne held a meere folly and did not esteeme it.

The Towne was wonderfully fortified by the great care and dilligence of Generall Vere, who himselfe in person stood in garde in the night, whilst the tides were low the which did much incourage the souldiers.

The 30. of December, there was little shooting neither did any vessell enter nor go forth by reason of the great winde.

It was so quiet about the Towne, as one would not haue said it had beene besieged, the enemy had inough to doe against the colde.

The 31. of December there was in a maner no shooting all day or night.

The besieged hauing intelligence that the enemy prepared to giue them a new assault, they manned their chiefe places, as *Helmont*, Sand-hill and others: and furnished them with Canon and stones, the which wrought the effect that shall be spoken of on the 7. of Ianuary.

At night two ships went forth without annoyance.

It was thought the Towne was now fortified with about 1200. men, all which labored about eight dayes in the fortifications, where nothing was forgotten that might helpe the besieged or annoy the enemy.

That daye there no speech of any slaine or hurt.

The first of Ianuary, they sent new yeares gifts with Musket shot; the enemy made 10. or 12. Canon shot at the Towne without any harme doing, there was no man slaine nor hurt that day. 1602.

The Arch-dukes men (knowing they did but thunder with their Canon through houses already broken,) grew daylie more colde; that day there went no



1602.

ship in nor out, by reason of the great winde: a Barke which the day before had stucke vpon the Sands neere vnto the halfe Moone, was drawne into the Hauen this night.

The 2. day there was little shooting on either side, onely in the morning they sent some Canon-shot one vnto another, but ( a great raine falling ) they stayed, so as that day there was no man flaine nor hurt in the Towne.

The 3. of Ianuarie, the enemye made two or three shott into the towne, and so rested all that night, they shott awhile in the day time but hurt no man.

Generall Vere had sent some Souldiers into the countrie to learne some newes; hauing beene fixe dayes abroad, they returned this day, and brought newes, that in the countrie they durst not say, but that the Arch-duke was alreadie maister of the towne, although his resolution were onely to giue a generall assault within eight or ten dayes, the which they held so assured, as they durst not hould the Towne but for taken.

The 4. of Ianuarie they discharged many Musket shott, and about midnight the enemye shott 8. or 10. Canon-shott, and an houre or two after day, 10. or 11. more, with one of the which a Smith was hurt in his house with a peece of a Stone, and some Souldiers.

All that day nor night no shippe went in nor out: about noone they of the towne discouered in the enemies campe some Noble-man mounted vpon a white Horse, before whom marched fise or fixe foote-men: they shott at them, and the enemye into the Towne, which sport continued two houres and more: there  
were



were three Souldiers slaine in the Towne and some 1602 hurt.

The 5. of Ianuary, they did shoote continually day and night on either part, and there were three souldiers in the Towne slaine.

The enemies made a new Port at their fort which is in the East.

The 6. of Ianuary, they shot much on eyther side according to their custome, but they of the Towne more often then the enemy, for that they shewed themselves but one or two at a time: about foure of the clocke in the after noone the enemy releeuing his gardes, they of the Towne shot furiously at them, and they answered them with the like, there was no man slaine in the Towne but one or two hurt.

The same day three ships went forth, at whom the enemy shot much, they did no other harme but brake one of their Mafts, yet they went away safe.

The 7. day of Ianuary, the Arch-duke battered all the day long, ( without intermission ) the Bulworke of Sand-hill, *Helmont*, *Porke-espike* and other places neere ynto them, with 18. Canons from two of his batteries, the one is at the foote of the downes vpon the *Cateyes*, and the other on the South-side thereof, all the Bullets waying 40. or 46. poundes a peece, the Canoniers did reckon aboue two thousand shotte, besides that which was shot on the East-side of the Towne: this done about sixe of the clocke at night the tide being spent he gaue a generall assault, his numbers were great, his horfmen driuing them forward behinde, and they came with great fury vpon the olde Towne, the which they entred by the West Hauen, and by it, ( as also along

A furious  
and blou-  
dy assault.



1602. the shoare ) they beganne to giue the scalado to Sand-  
hil, (hauing first broken and ouerthrowne the Pallissa-  
does ) and had (to that end ) carried many ladders with  
them, and light Bridges for an assault, the which they  
fastened in diuers places with such furie, as it seemed  
the towne would be taken.

Generall Vere with his Brother Sir *Horatio* were pla-  
ced in that quarter with a troope of chosen Souldiers,  
to succour their men in case there were need, who see-  
ing what past, the Generall crost ( with a part of his  
troope by the mines ) into the False-Braye, casting him-  
selfe with great cries vpon the Arch-dukes men, whom  
he repulst three times, and although they returned al-  
wayes with fresh Souldiers, yet could they not preuaile  
with their Pikes and Muskets against the furie of the  
English : notwithstanding the Arch-dukes men did  
well, and gaue an assault at one instant in all places: yet  
must they needes flie. The aduantage of the besieged  
consisted in the preparations which they had made,  
beeing long before aduertised of the enemies des-  
seigne.

Assault vpon  
the East

Vpon the East-side the assault was likewise giuen,  
but about two houres too late, for the water began  
now to rise, the which did much amaze the Souldiers,  
for they did see that if they stayed there any longer  
they could not be releued by their fellowes, which  
was the cause that they retired: the greatest slaughter  
was made in their retreat, for the Canon (charged with  
chaines and small Bullets, ) and the Muskets could not  
misse so thick a troope.

Assault at  
Helmont  
and the  
English  
trenches.

The Arch-dukes men gaue an assault also vnto the  
Fortes of *Helmont*, *Porke-espike*, and to all the English  
trenches



Trenches, which Trenches (according vnto the Generals order and commaund) being weakely manned, were easily taken, but soone after finding great resistance in the towne, at the Polder, South-bulwarke and their Ravelins: considering that there was no meanes to come vnto the towne that way, after they had set fire on the *Corps de garde*, they abandoned the trenches.

Generall Vere had caused two double Canons to be planted that day vpon the flankes of the West port, with some other peeces that were there before, the which with others in other places, did scoure along the Sand-hill and the West Ravelin, and played vpon the comming and returne of the enemies, and whilest the assault continued, they charged them with chaines and nailes, and little sacks full of Musket Bullets, which made a great slaughter, so as there was a pittifull crie of hurt men and dying, and the Souldiers fell one vpon another *pel mel*.

The enemy being hotte at the assault, and the water risen; Generall Vere caused the sluices to be taken vp, the which did coole the enemies courage: and he (growing more and more assured) charged them and put them to flight, recouering all their ladders, bridges and other instruments which they had brought.

All about the *Sand-hill* euen vnto the old Church, & all about the *Porke-espike*, in the West Ravelin, and in the English trenches, all was full of dead bodies: I speake not of those that were slaine going and coming by the Canon charged with chaines & small shot, nor of those that were drowned, some of whose bodies were carried along the shoare euen vnto *Calais*.



1602.

The spoile was great in mony, apparell, and other things of price: Searching among the dead, they found a young Spanish woman neere vnto Sand-hill, in mans apparrell, the which (as they might gesse by her wounds) had beene slaine at the assault; she had vnder her apparrell a chaine of Golde set with precious stones, with other Iewelles and siluer; during this assault the Arch-duke was behind the battery of *Cateyes*, and the Infanta *Isabella* at the fort of *Isabella*.

Those which gaue the assault to the olde Towne were furnished with two or three dayes victuals, which they had brought in by sacks, they had also all kindes of instruments to intrench themselues if the enterprise had succeeded.

They of the Towne had dismounted & cast downe all the great peeces that were in the false bray and at the *Porke-espike*, least the enemy should vse them against themselues: the enemy had already brought fixe Barrelles of Poulder to the Ruelin of the *Porke-espike*, to furnish it & defend it against the Towne, but hauing no leasure to vse them, they were forced to leaue them to saue their liues.

The order which the Arch-duke had giuen, was that during the chiefe assault on the West side, other troupes should charge vpon the East, and if this had beene executed with dexterity, and that all his troupes could haue ioyned together, Generall *Perre* had had much more trouble to resist them, and the party had beene doubtfull.

They were to that end in their great Battailons before the Towne vpon the Goller, but the tide which came in (as we haue saide) did somewhat disappoint this



this desleigne; then one of the Towne going out of the halfe Moone, yeelding himselfe vnto them, diuerted them, saying that there were but forty souldiers in the halfe Moone, and offered to conduct them thether, the which he did and they tooke it easily. Generall Vere with great iudgement had left it thus ill manned to draw the enemies thether and by that meanes deuide them, and make them to loose time, contenting himselfe to garde the strongest places and most importing, assuring himselfe that hee should soone recouer the weaker.

The Generals  
wisedome.

The Arch-dukes men hauing thus taken the halfe Moone, and being many therein, they beganne with Spades, Pike-axes and other instrumentes which they had brought, to fortifie themselues against the Towne, but all preuailed not, for they of the Towne began to shoote at them from the South Bulworke and from that of *Spaine*, with their Canon and Musket, with such fury as they slue very many: and with all seeing the tide to rise more and more, they beganne to faint, there vpon Generall Vere sent Captaine Day with some troupes against them: who fell vpon them with threates and cries, and chased them out with great effusion of bloud; the next day they could 300. flaine in the halfe Moone, besides them that were drowned and hurt.

In this generall assault which continued aboue two houres, in all the places aboue mentioned, the Arch-duke lost aboue 2000. men amongst the which there were a great number of noble men, and commanders in war, that is the *Cont d'Imber* an Italian, who offered as much golde as he did waye for his ransome, and yet he

The Arch-  
duke loo-  
seth aboue  
2000.  
men.

Noble  
men flaine.



1602. was slaine by a simple souldier; *Don Durango* Maister of the Campe, *Don Aluares Suares* Knight of the order of *S. Iaques*, *Simon Anthonie* maister of the Campe, the Sargeant *Maïor* who had beene in hostage at *Ostend* in December, 1601. and the liuetenant gouernor of *Andwerpe*.

There were onely 30. or 40. souldiers of the Towne slaine, and about a 100. hurt: but of men of command there were slaine Captaine *M. Haeffren*, Captaine *Nicholas Vandenberg*, and a liuetenant of the new *Geulx*, two English Liuetenants, an Auncient, two fouriers of Captaine *Haeffrens*, a gentleman of Generall *Veres*, and *Sir Horatio Vere* was hurt in the leg.

The Arch-duke sent a trumpet the next day to haue leaue to search among the dead, the which was granted him for foure houres.

The commanders  
names for  
the Arch-  
duke at the  
bault.

The names of the noble men and chiefes which commanded the Arch-dukes men at this assault are *Cont Farnese* an Italian with 2000. men of his Nation against Sand-hill. The *Cont Bonquoy* with 2000. men vpon the Gollet against the East Rauelin, but for that the tide was too high before he began to charge, he retired and went vpon the halfe Moone, from whence he was expelled. The Gouernor of *Dixmude* with 2000. men against the *Porke-espike*, who was repulst, another Captaines with 500. men vpon the west Rauelin, & another with 500. men also against the south squares (there are fortifications made in square, whereof they take the name) and the Sargeant *Maïor* against the West square with a 1000 men from whence they were all repulst.

And for that all kindes of lewde people fle into the low Countries, from *Italie*, *Spaine*, *Germanie* and al other



ther forraine Countries, as if cofers full of crownes attended them wide open, we will here set downe the copy of a letter found about one that was slaine, to the end they may see to what a feast they bring them, and how they are serued.

**G**ood brother, after my humble commendations done vnto you, I will let you vnderstand that I am in good health thanks be vnto God, hoping to haue the like newes of you, moreouer I would not faile to acquaint you with that which passeth here, first you must vnderstand that I haue great want and much paine, as well by reason of the bad weather, as through cold; for all the Country here abouts is couered with water, and we are very ill payed, and without hope of any better hereafter, which is the onely reason why our enemies holde *Ostend* so long.

They are as strong as they were the first day wee came before it, and we know not what meanes there is to take it, being impregnable, if God doe not looke on vs in mercie and pittie, and take compassion of our extreame miseries, and of the great mortality which is among the poore souldiers; we are 48. houres in the Water in garde in the trenches, and neuer stirre, and are not much better in our quarter; and yet wee must take all patiently, and besides all this wee doe dayly yea hourelie expose our bodies to the mercie of the Canon, Musket, Stones, Grenadoes, and other small vessels full of wilde-fire, without strawe to lie on, victualles or any thing else, but what wee buye for foure times the value, you may thereby gesse in what case a poore souldier liues, that is naked and without money at this time, the which is rightlie



1602. to die of hunger and colde; this raignes chiefly among the Souldiers new come from *Italie* and *Spaine*, whom I haue seene 18. or 20. dying together behind our quarter. For my part God be thanked I haue neither beene sicke nor hurt, and I haue a crowne in my purse, the which makes me to holde my selfe the happiest Souldier in the armie, for money is dainty heere, and it is held a strange thing to see a peece of siluer. The God of all mercie helpe vs; but truely it is a great folly to beleue that his Highnesse can take *Ostend*. From the Campe this 29. of December 1601.

The 8. of Ianuary there were great numbers of dead bodies seene before the olde towne 40. and 50. on a heape all naked: they were all goodly young men and black, as *Spaniards* and *Italiens*. The Arch-dukes men had carried away three Boates full. They had a white marke in their hattes for a token: some prisoners sayd they had beene forced to this assault by the Arch-duke, who had beene drawne therevnto by some Captaines, which desired to finde a meanes to free themselves from these toyles and miseries, and to seeke to make an end of the siege of *Ostend*: the which was also his Highnesse intention, and indeed it freed a great number of the miseries of this world. They say they had made an othe to put all to the sword they should finde in the towne, both women and children.

The 9. day there was little shooting on either side. This day the Captaines and men of commaund of the towne which had beene slaine at the last assault, were honourably buried.

There was no speech of any slaine or hurt in the towne, some of the enemies which had beene slaine or drow-



drowned at the last assault, were cast vp by the sea into the old towne, some of them were richly apparelled and had good bootie. 1602.

The 10. of Ianuary the Muskets played hotely on either side, as for the Canon they of the towne shott more then the enemy, and it seemed the enemies were so amazed with the reception they had had of them of the towne, as they knew not what to doe, such as escaped, thought still that death held them by the throat.

The 11. day there was no great shooting, and that without any great effect, but piercing of houses: That day there came certaine ships full of men of warre to the fleet before *Ostend*, the which did much reioyce them of the towne, but as some Captaines and Souldiers would haue entred into the towne, the enemy shott at them, and slue some: and about three of the clock in the afternoone some Ships and Barkes coming towards the towne, the enemy shott at them, and strooke a ship betwixt winde and water, and sunke a Barke which was before the North-hauen, but all the men were saued, onely two Souldiers were hurt, but without any danger.

The night before the 12. day there was great shooting of Muskets on either side: they of the towne shot two houres together fierie Bullets and great stones. then they ceased vntill day, when as they began againe, the tempest was so great as no ship could come into the towne, there was no man hurt.

In the beginning of the night, the tide being gone, some of the enemies horsemen past by the olde porte into the olde towne, with an intent to set fire of the Barkes, with the which they brought the Souldiers

P

from



1602. from the ships into the towne, but they of the towne shott so furiously after them from *Helmont* and the West Bulwarke, both with Canon and Musket, as they forced them to retire with speed.

All this night was spent in fetching of the Souldiers from the ships vnto the Towne, the which was done without the losse or hurt of any man.

The morning being faire there entred 16. ships by the gollet into the towne, at whom the enemies shott much, and did nothing but pierce through a ship, but all the men and whatsoeuer was in it was saued.

After dinner the new troopes with their coulours were set vpon the West port of *Helmont*, where they did their deuoir to shoote at the enemies defences: the enemy shott also at the towne from their batterie on the West, without killing or hurting of any man.

In the beginning of the night before the 14. day, they shott of either side: they of the towne trimmed vp a great Barke with artificall fire, to burne some of their enemies workes, but this deuise succeeded not.

In the morning before day, about foure of the clock, being a full sea, ten shippes entred into the Gollet, but being forced to stay by reason of foule weather, the enemy shott furiously at them and sunke three: there were three flaine, and three hurt, all that was in them was saued.

The same day the Seignior of *Marquet* came into the towne with foureteene companies of Souldiers, so as all the Trenches, Spurres, Bulwarkes, and rauelins of the towne were then manned with new companies.

In



In the olde towne neere vnto the olde Church in the afternoone, there was a Lieutenant and an Ancient slaine, and a Scottish-man had his leg strooke off. 1602.

The 15. of Ianuary they entertained one another with Canon and Musket till an houre within night.

There was great ioy in the towne, as well among the Souldiers as the Inhabitants for the goodly succours that were come vnto them.

There entred yet many Souldiers that night in Boates, and not one hurt. They of the towne shott more into the Campe then the enemy did into the towne, yet there was no man slaine nor hurt.

The 16. of Ianuary in the beginning of the night they shott little: vpon the morning they of the towne shott from the West Bulwarke, but they answered them not.

All this day was spent in mustering of the Souldiers in the Towne. There were 81. companies of the olde garrison, and 31. of the new: and although this were done with great noise of Drummes and shott of Muskets, yet the enemy made not aboue three shott into the towne, which made them of the towne to thinke they would raise the siege.

The 17. of Ianuarie, three shippes laden with victualles and English Beere, entred by the Gollet, at whom the enemy made many a shott, but could not touch them: That day there was nothing done, the enemy onely defaced certaine batteries made vpon the West and East.

The 18. day the enemy shott little, yet after dinner with one Canon shot from the East, they slue 2. Souldiers in the greene market, & hurt three, and with another shot



1602.

from the same place stroake of Captaine *Rolles* liutenants legs, whereof he died presently and hurt two or three others.

And for that at the same time the enemies changed their gardes, they of the Towne plaied with their Canon and Musket through them, and ouerthrew manie.

The 19. of Ianuary, there went forth seuen shippes full of souldiers, at whome the enemy made no shot, the night was so darke as they coulde not see them.

Both before dinner and after, the Canon played a little more on either side then the day before. They of the Towne shot against the battery of the Gollet, and the Sand downes vpon the East, and the enemy from the same place vpon the Towne, and yet no man was hurt. But there died daylie fixe or eight of sicke-nesse.

The 20. of Ianuary, Generall *Vere* sent forth some of his Leapers or aduenturers to take some prisoner of the enemies Campe, they tooke an Italian, whom the enemies would haue taken from them but they could not.

This night there fell out a great accident at the going forth of the shippes. There were three sunke, whereof two were full of souldiers of the companies of Captaine *Treslon Gistel* and *Hauttun*: the third was a shippe that brought English Becere. The Auncient to Captaine *Gistel* saued himselfe and lost his wife: there was also the widow of the deceased Treasurer or receiuer of the contribution. The *C. Euereuinn*, and a comissarie of the treasurer *Doubiets*.  
They



They were about two houres crying for helpe, before the enemy could goe vnto them, and if any had gone in time with boates, they might haue retired them from thence, but seeing that they of the Towne did not succour them, they sent a Drum through the Water to the enemies Campe, to require faire warres, else they would all die with their armes in their handes: the enemies granted what they demaunded and tooke them prisoners, and presently the three vessels were burnt.

1602.

All this night there was little floating on eyther side, nor any one slaine nor hurt in the Towne.

The besieged laboured diligently betwixt the Bulworke of *Pekel* and the East Port: In like sort at the new Hauen: so as the Towne grew daylie stronger, wherein *Generall Vere* spared neither paine nor trauell without feare of any danger, going the round twice a day and once a night, to see if the Corps de garde were well furnished, and the Sentinels well set, especially when the tide was spent.

The 22. day of Ianuary, they shotte of eyther side manye fire Bullets and stones, without any hurt done in the Towne, but that some souldiers going to fetch away the bordes of some shippes which had been sunke (ten or twelue dayes before) the enemy shot at them from the battery of the Gollet and hurt foure, the which they of the Towne seeing, they shot at this battery & at that of the East downes from the Bulworke of *Pekel*.

That same day Captaine *Battemburg* (who died of sicknesse the day before) was honourably buried in the Towne.



1602.

The 23. day one of the enemies ( being very drunke ) came into the Towne , the Generall caused him to be kept , that no man might speake with him before himselfe . The Generall also sent a Drumme to the enemy to know some newes of the prisoners that had beene taken in the shippes the 20. of this moneth. This fugitiue said that they had put some of them to death , for that they were of that company that had yeelded vp *S. Andrews* fort

The besieged shot furiously from the Bulworke of *Pekel* , vpon the Gabions which were vpon the Goller.

The 24. of Ianuary, the shot of eyther side with fire Bullets and stones vntill midnight.

The fugitiue said, that the peeces which were within the towne vpon *Flammemburg* , the which are demie Culuerins, did much harme to the enemies Campe, and that many souldiers had beene slaine.

The besieged laboured to fortifie the olde Towne, & had a 1000. men in worke there.

The enemy made a new battery on the West side , betwixt the battery of the *Cateyes* and the West downes.

The enemies changed their gardes in the after noone, they of the Towne shot at them from the west port and from *Helmont*, and many were scene to fall.

The 25. of Ianuary, they shot furiously of either side, with fire Bullets and stones.

From the morning vntill noone al was quiet enough; but presently after, the tide came with such a fury as all the Country was couered with water, & the plat-forme vpon the Goller was so ouerflowne as they could doe

no-



nothing with their Canon.

That day an Auncient had his legge shot off with a Canon which came from the West, and two Liutenants of the new Garison died of sicknesse: there was no man else slaine or hurt.

The 26. day two French souldiers ranne to the enemy, they plaied hotly with their Canon and Muskets against the Towne, who presently repaied it, and it seemed it was their duties to render carefully such offices one vnto another.

The besieged (seeing many goe and come betwixt *Alberts* fort, and the forts which are neere vnto the Towne) shot more vehemently then before.

They of the Towne shot furiously from *Flammemburg* to the west downes, and the enemies from the battery on the Gollet to *Flammemburg*.

That day one of the souldiers in garde in the halfe Moone vpon the Gollet went and yeelded to the enemy. There was no man slaine nor hurt in the Towne.

The 27. day the Townsmen shot furiously with their Canon, Muskets, stones & firy Bullets into the enemies Campe, so as they were constrained to be all night in armes vntill the morning that they ceased of all sides.

They were not seene to labour in any of their fortifications, although most part of their trenches were broken.

The 28. of Ianuary, the besieged finding that the enemy laboured at the battery which is vpon the Gollet, they plaied furiously on them from *Flammemburg*, and the Bulworke of *Pekel*,

The same daye one of the souldiers of Captaine *Grenu* fled to the enemy, after whome they of the



1602.

towne shott in vaine,

They of the towne hauing discovered some of the enemies Souldiers gathering of Muscles vpon the shoare at the end of the *Cateyes*, they shott at them from *Helmount* and slue some.

This night a small Barke went out of the Gollet without harme, which was the first since the 20. of the moneth.

The 29. in the morning they shott furiously of both sides; yet there was no harme done in the towne: the rest of the day they were as quiet as the warres had beene ended.

The enemy laboured no where, but they of the towne were still about their new hauen and East-port,

The 30. the besieged seeing many of the enemies going and comming betwixt the *Cateyes* and *Albert* fort, they planted against them those Canons which was vpon the West-port, *Helmont* and *Sand-hil*, with the which they slue many, for the Bulwarke of *Sand-hill* commands ouer all the Sea-shore, euen vnto the fort of *Albert*.

The 31. of Ianuary they of the towne shott so furiously from the Bulwarke of *Pekel* and *Spaine*, vpon ten or twelue small vessels which the enemy kept in a little chanell new made, and were new vnlading them, as they forced them to leaue their worke: yet the enemy made not one shott into the towne, but onely with fierie Bullets and stones against the ships that were within the gollet, to the which they did no harme.

At night two ships went out of the Hauen, and one Shaloup came in, but the enemy shott at them but hurt them not.

The



The 1. of Februarie the enemies changing their guardes after their accustomed maner vpon the West, they of the towne shott many volees of Canon and Musket after them.

The 2. of February the enemies stopt vp a Block-house neere vnto *Cowe-bridge*, and did fortifie it, and did inuiron the Forte of *Grossendurst* with Palisadoes.

The Townes-men thinking they would also worke at the Plat-forme which is vpon the Gollet, shott furiously at it from the Bulwarke of *Pekel*: the enemy sent them many Musket shotte and fierie Bullets, yet no man was slaine in the towne, and but three hurt.

The 3. of February Generall *Vere* sent an other Drumme vnto the Campe, for that he whom he had sent the 22. of Ianuary (to learne newes of the prisoners taken the 20. day) was not returned: this brings answer that the first had beene deteined vntill that the *Count Bouquoy* had newes from the Court, vpon the demaund which had beene made vnto him by Generall *Vere*, touching the prisoners, the which (as the Trumpet reported) were 90. and had beene all sent together to *Bruges*, and that some sicke and hurt men had perished in the Sea when as the ships were burnt; and that the enemies had saued a Maister of a shippe and his Boye, who were fled to the top of the Mast, which appeared yet aboue the water: and that some of the prisoners had beene slaine in colde blood and some hanged, for that (by their owne confessions) they had beene in *S. Andrews Fort*.

The 14. of February about mid-night, the enemy  
Q
shott



1602. shott some 80. Canon shott against a ship that was not seruiceable before the East port, for that they did see some Souldiers in it that brake it in peeces, three of them had their legges shott off, and some others hurt.

The same day a Souldier being in a lodging neere the West-gate with a pott of Beere in his hand was flaine.

In the meane time the besieged shott furiously from the Bulworke of *Pekel* at the platforme of the Gollet.

Three Souldiers of the towne being fled to the enemy, came presently forth in view of the towne, threatening (with spits furnished with roast-meat) as if they had wanted victuals, the which was false.

The enemy laboured vpon the South-west neere vnto the Fort of *Grossendurst*, at a Rampart which is in an oldewall, the which they raised vp higher, and in the middest did bulde a Corps de garde, about the which they made defences: they of the towne knew not what they would make, no more then of *Grossendurst*, about the which they had made Pallisadoes, for that they had not vsed them in all this siege.

The towne was then inuironed with 27. Fortes and Block-houses, in the fortification whereof they laboured dayly.

In the beginning of the night of the fift of Februarie, they shott of both sides with fierie Bullets and stones, but in the day time they shott nothing so much.

The 6. of February in the night they of the towne made



made many Canon-shott against a certaine worke 1602  
which the enemie began to raise at the ende of their  
batterie on the *Cateyes*, more aduancing towards the  
Sea, to plant Canon thereon, besides those that were  
already, to shoote more easily at the ships comming in  
and going out of the Hauen.

The besieged shott also continually at the batterie  
on the Gollet, from whence the enemies shott to the  
sea dike, which is before the fortifications of the towne.

That day nor the day before there was no man  
slaine in the towne, onely one Souldier that was shott  
through, standing Sentinell in the olde towne vpon  
the East-rauelin.

The night before the 7. of February the enemy shot  
many Arrowes with Letters into the Towne, by the  
which they promised to giue good entertainment to  
those that would yeeld vnto them; saying that they  
had not sent them which yeelded vnto the Galleys,  
and that the report of some of theirs which had fled  
into the towne was false.

They laboured also this night at their worke on the  
North of their batterie of *Cateyes*, and had raised it al-  
most equall: they wrought also at their Ramper neere  
to *Grossendurst*.

They of the towne wrought also at their new Ha-  
uen, and in the fortifications of the old towne.

The 8. of February they shott all night on both sides  
with fierie Bullets and stones, there was no man slaine  
within the towne.

In the morning a Souldier of the halfe Moone  
ranne vnto the enemie.

Before noone a French Souldier passed the Pikes,



1602. for that he had slaine another souldier trecherously, he had beene discouered by the meanes of his Hat, which fell downe in flying awaye after that he had done the deede.

The besieged laboured continually at the rampares of the olde Towne.

The 9. of February, they shot little of eyther side.

There were some souldiers imbarcked in the Hauen which had staid there aboue three weekes attending the winde, to saile into *Zeland*, whereof there died many daylie of sickenesse.

The 10. of February, they shot on both sides with fiery Bullets, stones and Muskets vntill midnight, and after they ceased.

The 11. day about two houres after midnight there went 12. ships out by the Gollet, at whom the enemye made aboue 60. shot from their battery which is vpon the Gollet, and onely shot one betwixt winde and water, the which returned into the Towne without any more harme: there was no speech of any slaine or hurt that day in the Towne.

The 12. of February, there came 15. ships to *Ostend*, laden with munition, victuals and souldiers, whereof two by the Marriners fault ranne on ground neere to the enemies battery vpon the Gollet, the one was full of Holland Beere, some 36. or 40. yardes on the North side from the battery, in a place whereas the Towne souldiers durst not go for feare of the Canon, the enemy set fire of it in the morning, but it would not take; the other was laden with English Beere, as neere the battery on the South side, or neerer, in a place whereas they of the Towne could not shoote at them; the souldiers



diers of the halfe Monne which were 250. yardes of 1602.  
drew out all the Beere and other things, when as the  
enemy durst not shew himselfe to hinder them, for  
feare of the Canon of *Pekel* and the Bulworke of  
Spaine, but they of the Towne could not haue the  
other shippe: a Marriner had his legge shot off, and a  
woman with two others were hurt.

The enemyes within few dayes had much aduan-  
ced their battery of *Cateyes*, two yardes towardes  
the North, and beganne againe to worke: Generall  
*Vere* caused a demie Culuerin to bee planted against  
them, the which this night, (after a lowe Water,)  
made twenty shotte to hinder their worke, and for  
that this peece was vppon *Helmont*, the enemyes  
made foure shot from the East against it, whereof some  
passed ouer *Helmont*, and went into their owne quar-  
ter which is vpon the *Cateyes*, wherein they hurt them-  
selues, as they might see which were in garde at the  
*Porke-espike* and *Helmont*.

This day fise souldiers of the Towne went and yeel-  
ded to the enemy, fearing to be punished for mutinies  
and disobediencies.

The thirteene of February in the night, the enemies  
carried away by peece meale whatsoeuer was in the  
shippe that was runne on ground of the North  
side of their batterye, not daring then to goe by  
day.

The same night the Leapers and aduenturers  
brought a Spanish auncient prisoner into the Towne.

The 14. the enemy laboured all night at their bat-  
tery of *Cateyes*, and raised vppe the ende which they  
had



1602. had begunne the daye before, almost equall with it, although they shotte continually at them from the Towne.

This night a shippe went foorth of the Hauen without harme, and yet the enemy shotte much at them.

There entred many souldiers in shaloupes from the shippes of warre into the Towne and no man was hurt.

The Spanish Auncient taken prisoner the day before, saide, that the enemy had small hope to take *Ostend*, and that the Arch-duke continued the siege against the aduice of the Councell of warre, and was greeued that he did not raise the siege wholly, when as he went to succour *Hertzeghenbusch*, the which was a good pretext, but seeing it was so, that for his owne reputation and for the honour of the King of Spaine, it did import him to continue the siege, he would not now raise it: moreouer hee saide that there were 12000. foote and seuen hundred horse before the Towne, and that they had promised five stivers in money and two in bread a daye to euery souldier but they were ill paide: and that at the last assault, his highnesse had lost the choice of all his whole armie, most part of them being Spaniards which had serued the King in those Countries and else where, and that the enemy was about some inuention to stoppe vp the Hauen.

As for the fortifications of the towne: there is in the olde Towne against the Sea, from Sand-hill towardes the North, foure strong Blocke-houses, vpon euery  
one



one of the which there are two Canons, and farther into the new Towne they haue made a newe Rampart, and newe Ditch, and the olde Rampars (which runne along the Sea) had beene fortified within. 1602.

At this worke and such like there were a 100. men labouring from one Sunne to another, one halfe laboured from the night to the morning and rested the day, and the other from morning vntil night & then rested, and they were paied by the Commissaries of the Stats going from their worke.

The 15. of February two ships went out of the hauen at night without any hurt.

The enemy set that daye 3. sentinels on the East side more then he was accustomed, so as the halfe Moone was alwayes inuironed with them.

The besieged thought it was by reason of the troupes that were arriued, for there were 15. companies come into the Towne with *Colonell Edmond*: yea some in barkes in the day time, at whom the enemy shot and hurt two Marriners.

The enemy laboured also that day vpon the North side of the battery of *Cateyes*, not ceasing for all the Towne Canon which plaied continually: they did also shoote, but there was no man flaine nor hurt in the Towne, onely one Carpenter, who had his arme stroake off with a Canon vpon the West bulworke.

The 16. of February they might see the three extraordinary sentinelles vpon the East, for that the enemy feared a sallie from the Towne beeing little lesse then 6000. men in it.



1602.

There were ( besides this number ) some Souldiers in the ships of warre at Anchor before the towne, the which could not enter by reason of a tempest: yet some being more hastie, entred in small Barkes, one of them through errour by reason of the night, landed his men of the enemies side, and so returned towards the shippes, the Souldiers perceiuing' that they were of the enemies side, ranne to the waters side, where by good hap they found an other Barke which came to land other Souldiers, of whom they demanded succour; the Marriner hauing carried away his men, came to fetch them, but in the meane time the enemy had discouered them, and pursued them, so as they were forced to runne vp to the chinne in the water to saue themselves, and there was not any one of them lost.

The 17. of February the enemy began to shoote with his canon and stones into the towne, & they answered them with the like, the which continued all night.

They of the towne shott all the morning from *Sandhill*, *Helmont*, and the West-gate Bulwarke, at the batterie of *Cateyes*, although they could not perceiue that the enemy had laboured there that night or the night before.

The 18. of February in the beginning of the night they shott furiously on either side, both with Canon and Musket; and as they changed their guardes, Capitaine *Bernards* Ancient had his hand wherewith he held his coulours strooke off with a shott. These Canonades continued all night, they of the towne slept not, but gaue them their exchange, and in the morning they ceased a little.

There



There came an *Italian* flying into the towne, who (by his saying) had slaine one of his companions at play. He said among other things, that the Arch-duke was yet resolved not to depart from the towne vntill he were maister of it: and that the enemy had resolved to make a Bridge vpon the West-hauen, to passe into the olde towne, and on the East-side they would make a ditche from the Downes vnto the Goller, and besides that, they would spoile all the sluces and chanel which went into the West-goller: and moreouer he spake something touching the discontentment of the Souldiers in the Campe.

After dinner the enemy shott little into the towne, and there was no speech of any slaine or hurt.

The 19. of February, as they were changing of their guards in the towne, the enemy played furiously at them both with Canon and Musket, and Captaine *Morgans* Ancient with three other Souldiers were slaine at one shott, and some others hurt: and soone after there were two other Souldiers slaine, not farre from Generall *Vere*, who was vpon *Helmont*, speaking with the Colonels *Marquet*, *Lohn*, and *Edmond*.

This night there entred into the Hauen two ships laden with men, and three with poulder, at whom the enemy shott but could not hit them. There was also some Canon spent on eyther side without any hurt to the towne.

The 20. of February the enemies Canon played all night, and slue Sir *Horatio Veres* Cooke in his Kitchen.

The same night there entred 6. ships into the Goller, whereof two onely came into the towne, the other foure by the ignorance and fau'lt of the Marriners ran a



1602.

shoare neere vnto the enemies batterie, one was laden with Turfes, an other with Piles and Plankes, and the other two with Beere and other commodities: the enemies did what they could to borde them, but they were hindered by the continuall shooting from the towne, which shott at them from *Flammembourg* and the Bulwarke of *Peket*: most of the men saued themselves in the halfe Moone, but the women and children were taken by the enemy. They of the towne seeing the tide come in, and that the enemy would take these ships, they ceased not to shoote fierie Bullets at them, so as they beate them in peeces, the greatest part of the marchandize was scene floating vpon the water, the rest burnt with the ships.

The enemy greeued for the losse of this bootie, shot from all their batteries vpon the towne, they slue two Souldiers and hurt some others.

The enemy going to worke vpon the North side of their batterie of *Catteyes*, they of the towne shott at them to hinder them.

The besieged were not idle, but laboured to fortifie the towne against the violence of the Sea, for that the Marriners said they should within few dayes haue a great tide.

The 21. of February there was little shooting on cyther part. The enemies laboured carefully to raise their trenches and defences vpon the West, and that night they did much aduance their batterie of *Cateyes*.

Two ships more straid out of their course towards the enemies campe, neere to the downes vpon the East, but they of the towne thought they had done it expressly to sell their marchandise the better, seeing the enemies



mies shaloups board the without any shew of hatred. 1602.

The enemies sent to the towne the wiues of sixe Souldiers whom they had taken in the foure former ships, after they had had their pleasures of them, and turned them away naked, with other outrages, yea their little children were black with stripes.

This day there was little shooting, nor any man hurt in the towne.

The 22. of February in the beginning of the night, they shott furiously for an houre and a halfe one against an other, the besieged continued all night, euen when the tide was spent, to hinder their enemies worke. In the morning they might discouer where the enemies had laboured vpon the North of their batterie of *Cat-eyes*, and raised it somewhat.

Moreouer the enemy laboured vpon the West corner of the West-downes, the which they fortified in such sort, as if they ment to stay there ten yeares.

After dinner, a poore woman with childe, the wife of one of Captaine *Weinbergens* Souldiers (who was in garde in the halfe Moone) being gone forth to gather vp some boards of the broken ships, was flaine most barborously by one of the enemies, before she could be succoured by them of the towne: there was none else flaine or hurt that day.

The 23. of February the enemy shott much at the ships that lay in the towne ditches, discouering them easily for that the tide was high and the billow great.

After dinner *M. Georges* ingenier of the towne, being busie about the making of some fire-workes, the next house being by negligēce set on fire, fired his worke, & flue him with three of his seruants, & hurt many others:



1602. the enemy seeing this, shot both from East & west vpon the Towne for an houre together, without any harme doing : the fire was presently quenched by such as are appointed for the like accidents.

The 24. of February in the beginning of the night, the enemy shot fire Bullets and great stones into the Towne.

The worke which they had begon vpon the North side of the battery of *Cateyes* fell downe for the most part, as also that which they had made vnder the corner of the West downes, and that which they had begunne vpon the West downes was in like sort ouerthrown, for that they were almost all made of the white Sand of the downes, and the water had washt it away at the foote.

The olde towne was not freed from this nights ruine, the enimie seeing that the last night the tide had made many breaches in the Sea dike, neere vnto the East gate, they began to shoote from their battery of the Gollet to ouerthrow it quite.

The Gabions which were vpon the south side of this battery to the number of 35. were this night carried away by the sea, for that they were not full, and serued onely for Blindes and couerings, for the chiefe battery is vpon the North, and there are 36. Gabions,

The enemy shot continually vpon the olde Towne and the *Porke-espike*, to increase the harme which the Sea had done them.

The Water was so high that daye, as the Country vpon the South and West was a League about ouerflowne, and all the enemies trenches and Blockhouses inuironed with water.

The



The English square was also in the water, the Counterscarfes vpon the west were pearced, and there came much water into the Towne both by the East & West.

There was a breach of ten yardes long in the sea dike neere the East gate; the Bulworke of *Pekel* began to fal, the new Hauen was spoiled and the olde Towne much indamaged.

Part of the halfe Moone vpon the Gollet was fallen, whilst this great tide lasted, the enemy made aboue 1800. Canon shot against the Towne, and especially against the dike and other places that were endamaged: yet there were few slaine or hurt.

They of the Towne answered them in like sort from all quarters, and it was a terrible thing to see, for both the Towne and the Campe seemed as if they had beene all one fire: the alarme was generall, not so much for the shot, as for the great ruine the Sea made in diuers partes of the dike, Port, Rampars and defences.

The 25. day they might see diuers workes vnder the West downes right against the *Porke espire* ouerthrowne, and that which had beene begunne on the North of the battery of *Cateyes* to be much defaced: they without laboured at the West downes.

They of the Towne shot from the Bulworke of *Pekel* into the Campe, & the enemy into the Towne, there was one souldier slaine vpon Sand hill and two hurt passing vpon the rampars.

The 26. of February, they shot on eyther side vntill midnight, and then ceased a while.

Before noone the aduenturers of the towne brought in one of the enemies prisoner, who at the first would not



1602. speake, seeming simple and a foole, but in the end hee said that two regiments were gone from the Campe into Brabant.

There was great ioy in the Towne, the besieged hauing discovered vpon the West some shippes comming from *Zeland*.

The 27. of February, at the changing of the gardes two souldiers had eyther of them a leg shot off.

The same night foure ships went out of the Port, of the which the enemy shot one through, yet by the dexterity of the Marriners it was drawne forth.

The Maister of the workes labouring in the Counterscarfe was shot into the raines of the backe with a Musket, and two others were hurt.

The enemy began to repaire the corner of the west downes, and they drew out great store of goods out of the boates that were in the new chanel.

The 28. of February (the water being high) there entered 8. saile into the Hauen wherof the enemy shot two through, but for that the one got vnto the Rauelin of the Towne and the other neere to the Sea dike, they were presently succoured by them of the towne, and all saued that was within them.

*Colonel Dorth* entred the towne with a number of souldiers in shaloupes, and some comissaries & treasurers of the States, with mony for the souldiers and labourers.

The Counterscarfe (which had beene broken) was repaired this night by the diligence of them that commanded in the Towne: and likewise the olde Towne (which had beene much indamaged) was repaired and put in defence; so as the besieged feared not their enemies on that side.

After



After dinner the besieged shot from *Flammemburg*, where they had planted two demy culierins, at certain souldiers that were vpon the Sands, neere vnto their boates, at the foote of the downes, who presently fled.

The enemy shot sometimes towards the Sea, against the ships that were in the roade: the ships of warre also in going and comming shot at the Arch-dukes Camp.

That day in the after noone foure of the enemies souldiers came & yeelded themselves into the Towne, and being pursued neere, the besieged gaue them their hands: they said, their men had beene on the East side foure dayes together in battaile, fearing least they of the Towne (who had receiued in so many souldiers) would make some sally out vpon them.

About that time the Spaniards began to mutine in the Arch-dukes Campe, and said openly, that they had brought them vnto the slaughter yea vnto hel, many of them conspired together to carry away the Arch-duke and the Infanta (if they could) to *Newport*, to haue paiement of that which was owing them, by the meanes of a generall mutinie: this was discovered and ten or twelue of the principall, (whereof one was all aparaled with golde) were stragled: Some priuat men did write from *Andwerp*, that the Arch-duke did fortifie his Campe more against the secret practises of his owne men, then against his enemies: and that the Spaniards hauing made some new practises, had beene discovered by some of them, & ten of the chiefe were presently hanged: they of *Andwerp* by their letters lamented their miserable estate, for that they could hardly recouer any victualles, and that with great impositions, and yet they did see no advancement in their affaires, nor any better

The Spaniards mutine for want of paie.

Complaints of them of *Andwerp*.



1602.

hope to come: as for *Ostend*, there was lesse hope to take it then the first day: and the desseigne which had beene made to stop the gollet, and to hinder the going in and out of shippes, had failed, spending their time at three platformes which batter the towne in ruine, to tire the besieged with their Canon, hauing no likelihood to force the towne, in the which there were about 6000. men in garrison, and they receiued fresh men dayly, with munition, victuals, and all other commodities by the gollet, in despight of the platforme which is thereon.

The night before the first of Marche it was a great mist, the enemy tooke this occasion, fastning a Cable crosse the Gollet, where the ships should passe, tying nine pipes vnto it, this was tyed to three Anchors, to stay the ships all together, and then to sinke them with the Canon: but the shippes by chance stirred not: this fogge being past, the besieged discouered the pipes, and by the meanes of an other darke cloude which came presently, they sent some Boates to see what it was, who cut the Cable and brought it into the towne, and so this inuention was made fruitelesse.

From the beginning vntill midnight both the Canon and Musket played much on either side.

The same night there came five Barks to *Ostend* laden with fresh fish, at whom the enemy shott but could not hit them.

This day three Souldiers of the towne and a boye went and yeelded themselues to the enemy, and some dayes after a French Fourrier, who had mutined.

Great necessitie in the campe.

After dinner they of the towne brought in a prisoner, who sayd there was great necessitie in the armie, many



many sick, and great mortalitie, and that no man durst 1602.  
presume to speake of raising the siege, nor discourage  
his companions, nor report any ill newes touching the  
siege, vnder paine of corporall punishment: and that  
their Highnesses had resolved not to leaue the towne  
before they were maisters thereof, according to the  
aduise sent out of Spaine, whatsoeuer it did cost, or  
whatsoeuer could chance: and that all the Germaine  
Captaines (which had serued their Highnesses) were  
gone into Germanie to leaue troopes: and that they  
were about some preparations to make the gollet fruit-  
lesse, and to hinder the entrie of ships.

They might see the enemy busied still to reaire the  
corner of the West-downes, but they could not dis-  
cerne them working at the *Cateyes*; there was no man  
slaine nor hurt that day within the towne.

The night of the 2. of March there was little shoo-  
ting on eyther-side vntill midnight, that (the tide be-  
ing gone) they of the towne shott vpon the Campe,  
to hinder their enemies worke.

This night a ship went forth, and none came in, yet  
many Souldiers came into the towne in Shaloupes,  
which entred by the North-hauen. In the afternoone  
they might see the enemies drawing forth diuers mar-  
chandise and commodities out of the Boates which  
were in the new chanell vpon the East.

The 3. of March in the beginning of the night  
there was little shooting, yet one shott strooke of the  
legges of a Lieutenant and an Ancient vpon *Flam-  
memburg*.

The night being darke and the tide high, there en-  
tered 50. saile into the towne, at whom the enemy  
made



1602. made 40. shott and neuer hurt them.

A little before day there entred eight saile more, there were yet many in the roade, and others which passed fetching the winde, to enter at night when it should be darke, the enemy shott at them, yet could not hurt them.

And for that it was a great mist that day, and also there was a generall muster, there was little shooting nor any man slaine nor hurt in the towne.

The 4. of March (the tide being high) there entred 21. saile into the gollet, the enemy shott two through, whereof the one was laden with Bauins, and entred into the Hauen, and the other with Turfes, the which by the error of the Marriners who were blinded with the smoake of the Canon, ranne on ground neere vnto the enemies batterie, the men were all saued and brought into the towne, which done the enemy set fire on the ship.

All that day both the Canon and Musket played hotly on either side: there were foure souldiers strooke with one shott vpon the Bulwarke of *Pekel*, whereof two died presently.

The night of the 5. of March, two small Barkes with Generall *Veres* horses and baggage went forth, at whom the enemy shott but hurt them not.

Before the breake of day the enemy shott many fire Bullets and stones into the towne, and strooke off a Marriners legge which was in the new-hauen.

The Sea dike neere to the West gate, hauing beene broken, the enemy might see from their batterie of the Gollet, the Souldiers as they went and came in the towne, and shott at them, yet they hurt few.

In



In the after-noone they hurt foure labourers which wrought in the Sea dike neere vnto the East-port. 1602.

A little before, the Estates had sent an Ingenier into the towne, who with another (which had continued there all the siege) laboured diligently in the fortifications of the towne, the labourers wrought cheerefully, for that they were well payed.

The 7. of March they shott fierie Bullets and stones on eyther side vntill mid-night, and then the Canon and Musket played. They did easily see the enemy labour at the *Catteyes*, but they suffered the corner of the West-downes to go dayly to ruine.

And for that at the West Square and at the *Polder* (which is without the towne) there was some thing ruined, they began to labour to fortifie them with trenches, defences, and ditches of 60. foote, and the counterscarpes which are about them: the which being finished, the enemy had no meanes to come neere the towne on that side, nor by the North-west, for the towne was exceeding well fortified on that side, and almost impregnable.

The tide was so high that day by reason of a strong Northerly winde and a tempest, as all the enemies Gabions and Block-houles were inuironed with water.

About noone a Souldiers wife being neere the East-gate where the dike was broken, had her head shott off with a Canon, and a Souldier both his legges.

Generall *Vere* departed, and Colonel *Frederike Van* Generall *Dorp* commanded in the towne, with the Colonels *Vere* leaues *Dort Marquet* and *Edmont*. Ostend.

The night before the 8. of March about midnight the water being high, there entred 34. saile by the gollet into



1602. the towne, at whom the enemies made but two shot, although presently after the shot about 80. in one of these was the baggage and prouision of *Colonel Dorp*.

In the meane time they of the Towne shot from *Pekel* Bulworke, and from that of Spaine, against the enemies battery, which kept them from shooting at the ships, not seeing them by reason of the great smoake.

In the afternoone they discovered many boates going to *Alberts* fort and there discharged.

They did also see the enemy inlarge & raise his battery vpon the Gollet towards the South, and repaired their battery at the foote of the East downes vpon the South side, the which they had let fall this Winter, and that they made a trench beneath the East downes betwixt the two *Cateyes*, to the end they might go frō one battery to another couered from the Towne Canon. There was no man slaine nor hurt in the Towne that day.

The 9. of March euery one was set to worke in the newe Hauen, which had bin indamaged with the tide, and they hoped to repaire it speedily.

Within 14. dayes there were 18. or 20. souldiers which had fled out of the towne vnto the enemy, some of them were taken againe and one of them was hanged the daye before: the enemy seeing this lightnesse, thought it a good meanes to weaken the garison of the Towne, shooting many letters into it, where by they promised to giue them good entertainment that should yeeld vnto them, or else a passport with some money to returne into their Countries.

About two of the clocke in the afternoone, the first ship went out by the new Hauen, the enemies made  
many



many shott at it, whereof one ouerthrew a Pipe that stood vpon the hatches. There came also two Frigats against it, there were two companies of Souldiers in the ship which shewed themselues too soone, and shott at the Frigates, and presently there came foure great Barkes from the towne to succour them, which made the Frigats retire to their trenches or Forte neere the Downes.

This ship went to the Fleet with a Northerly winde, Colonel *Edmont* gaue vnto the Pilote two Rose-nobles to drinke.

Colonel *Lohn* parted from *Ostend* to goe into *Ze-land*.

The 10. of March they shott fierie Bullets and stones on eyther side.

After midnight the water being high, there went 33. saile out of the Hauen, at whom the enemies shott, but did them no great harme, they went forth by the new Hauen, and at the same instant the besieged shott furiously against the battery of the gollet from whence they shott most at the ships.

A new  
Hauen at  
Ostend.

The enemy laboured dayly at this batterie, as also at those which are aboue, and at the foote of the downes: they might also see that the night before they had laboured on the North side of their batterie of *Catteyes*.

They laboured also at a new batterie behinde their gabions vpon a mountaine of sand, the which they made square with Bauins and Sand, and raised it very high.

A little after dinner there came 16. saile into the towne by the new Hauen, at whom the enemy shott



1402. much but to no end: They shot also from diuers batteries at the people which shewed themselves openly in great numbers to see the entrie of these shippes: their were 9. or 10. strooken with one shot, some flaine, others hurt. Their were three also flaine vpon the Bulworke of *Pekel*, foure at the new hauen, & three in the olde Towne; It was strange to see the folly of this people, which put themselves in danger by multitudes, when any shippe came in by day, without any other subiect.

Besides these ships, there entred many souldiers and boats into the Towne that day.

The 11. of March, in the night there entred 13. ships more into the Towne by the Gollet, whereof three were shot through, yet little or no harme done. One of them beeing laden with turffes went behinde the halfe Moone, whether the enemy could not goe: so as within 10. or 11. dayes there had entred little lesse then a hundred saile into the Towne, laden with all commodities, in open day or by moone light by the Gollet, they might haue entred more safely by the new Hauen which was now repaired.

This night there were fiue souldiers strooke on the East side with one Canon shot, whereof two dyed.

There were two others flaine in the South square where they laboured.

There was also at the greene Market a souldier cut in two in the midst with a great shot, and another had both his legs strooke off.

The 12. of March the enemies shot many stones into the towne, & canon shot at the west rauelin, aboue two houres together, to keep the of the towne frō working.

That



That day there went seven shippes out of *Ostende* 1602. at whome the enemy shotte but hurt them not: And for that the North-winde was somewhat loude, the trenches and Blocke-houses of the enemies were full of Water as if it had beene a great tempest.

This day they shot as of custome, yet there was no man slaine nor hurt in the Towne.

The thirteenth of March no shippe went in nor out.

The foureteene daye was as quiet as if there had been no enemy before the Towne, there was one souldier slaine in the olde Towne, and another had his leggs strooke of.

About noone the tide being spent, twelue ho. slemen of the Towne went out vpon the Sandes neere vnto the *Cateyes*, thinking to drawe forth some of the enemies, vpon whom the Towne Canon (which was planted for the nonce) should haue plaied, but no man appeared.

They might see a great number of vessels in the new channell on the East-side.

The 15. of March there parted twenty five saile from *Flessingue*, laden with souldiers, munition and victualles, the which arriued all togeather at *Ostend*. The comming in and going of the ships was in a maner like all the rest of this yeare, as in like sort their ordinary shooting, the which the reader may imagin by that which hath bin written and that which followeth: we will leaue this discourse (the which is happily too long) because we will not weary him, and will talke of other accidents which haue past this yeare, to take our first traine in the yeare, 1603.



1602.

The 5. of Iuly 1602., the Commaunders charged them of the towne, that at the breake of day they should celebrate the first day of the siege of *Ostend*, shooting of all ther Canon insteede of belles, for they had none, and euen the women and children were commaunded to beate vpon kettles, pannes, and other things to make a great noise, which put all the Campe into alarme, not knowing what it might be: There was also a Sermon made to giue thanks vnto God for the miraculous preseruatiō of the Towne this yeare, with hartly prayers that it would please to him preserue it so hereafter.

Prince  
Maurice  
comes into  
Brabant.

The Arch-duke hauing certaine intelligence that the armie of the States vnder the command of Prince *Maurice*, past by *Brabant* to come to succour *Ostend*, he caused his Campe to be fortified against the Towne and intrenched himselfe without, to attend this armie: these newes did wonderfully reioyce them of the Towne, who hoped to be freed by this meanes, but for some let, or occasion that was offered, his Excellencie past not into *Flanders*.

Prince  
Maurice  
besiegeth  
Graue.

Newes being come vnto the Camp that Prince *Maurice* had laied siege to *Graue*, and the Arch-duke fearing nothing behinde, resolved to finde some meanes to presse *Ostend* more straightly, and to stop the passage for the ships, to this end he causeth *Saulcisses* to be made (so they call certaine things made of wood, ryed together very close with hoopes of yron, like vnto a tunne, but bigger and longer, behinde the which a horseman might easily couer himselfe, and to roule it they must haue 50. or 60. men) the which were planted on the East side of the towne vpon the *Gollet*, & behinde they wrought



wrought presently, although the towne shott furiously vpon them. 1602.

The enemy also made very great gabions which they filled with very great stones, to resist the Sea and the shott from the towne.

Whilist these things were doing before *Ostend*, Prince *Maurice* did all he could to take *Graue* both by mine and batterie, forcing it to yeeld the 20. of September 1602. and made himselfe be knowne for the lawfull heire and Lord thereof, in view of the Admirall of *Arragon* Lieutenant generall to the Arch-duke, who incamped neere vnto the towne to succour it, but seeing his Excellencie very well intrenched, and that he should preuaile nothing, and that his troopes did leaue him dayly, in the end he retired without any exploite doing worthy the remembring.

The Arch-duke hauing intelligence that *P. Maurice* had taken the towne of *Graue*, was more earnest then before to stop the passage of the ships; the which notwithstanding all the inuentions his men could finde out, haue entred all the time of the siege, and a great number by the gollet at the Canons mouth, oftentimes at noone day without feare of any danger.

Their inuencion of *Saulcisses* proued also fruitlesse for this desseine, they tryed yet many other inuentions, both to fill vp the Gollet, and to annoy the ships in passing.

Among other inuentions the enemy filled a great number of sacks with sand to stop vp the gollet, hauing tried this deuice in the chanell neere to *Alberts* fort, but heere it proued fruitlesse by reason of the violence of the tide.

T

That



1602.

Sickenesse  
in Ostend  
and in the  
Campe.Ostend  
new built.

That which most afflicted the besieged this yeare was the sicknesse that was among them, whereof some dyed dayly: neither was the enemy free from it.

The Estates of the confederate Prouinces, considering that the discommodities the souldiers suffered was the cause of this sicknesse, they caused the towne to be new built, and the streetes were so disposed, as the enemies Canon could do them little harme, dying at the first thing it hit, so as of 50. shott not one did hit a man, and when any such thing chanced, they held it for an extraordinarie accident, which did not trouble them, and this made the sicknesse to cease.

Galleys of  
Spaine vn-  
der Spig-  
nola.

This yeare 8. great Galleys were rigged and made ready at *Seuille* in *Spaine*, their chiefe commander was *Frederike Spignola*: that wherein *Spignola* went was called *S. Lewis*, the Captaine thereof was *Redon*. The second the *Trinitie*, the Captaine *Pedro de Fergas*. The third the *Occasion*, the Captaine *Auila*: the fourth *Saint Philip*, the Captaine *Don Rodrigo de Nervaiz*. The fift the *Morning*, the Captaine *Pedro Collado Tsnorro*. The sixt *S. Iuan*, the Captaine *Hernando de Vergas*. The seauenth *Hiacintho*, the Captaine *Christouall de Mongis*: and the eight *La Padilla*, the Captaine *Iuan de Sossa*. There were 400. men in euery one of these Galleys besides the slaues, and eight hundred Souldiers they tooke in as they past at *Lisbone*. These Galleys went their course towards England, and were sent by the King of Spaine with some others which the Arch-duke had, to scour along the coast of England, Holland, and Zeland, to interrupt their trade, and to annoy them of *Ostend* by Sea: Two of them, the *Trinitie* and the *Occasion* were sunke by Sir *Richard Luson* Knight,



Knight, then Admirall in those Seas for the Queene of England, vpon the coast of Spaine and Portugall, about the *Cape of Sicambre*; afterwards these Galleys tooke their course towards the Lowe-Countries, and the thurd of October according to the new computation, they were first discovered by two of the Statesmen of warre: the one was called the *Tyger*, whereof *Iacob Pieterssen-Mol* was Captaine: and the other the *Pellican*, whereof *Timen Luberts* was Captaine: these two Shippes followed and chased these fixe Galleys.

The same day *Robert Mansell* Knight, then Admirall for the Queene of England in the narrow Seas, lying betwixt *Doner* and *Calais*, discovered them also: and sent presently to Captaine *Jonas*, Captaine of one of the Kings ships called the *Aduantage*, commanding him to goe presently to *Calais*, and along all the coast of *Flanders*, and to giue an allarme with Canonadoes, especially to giue aduertisement of the coming of these Galleys to the States Fleete, which laye then vpon the coast of *Flanders*; the which the Captaine did performe most faithfully and verie speedily.

The Admirall did also oftentimes shoote of the greatest peece of Ordinance in his shippe, to aduertise and call an other of the Kings shippes called the *answer*, whereof *Bredgate* was Captaine, who ridde at an Anchor South of the Downes, and he presentlie set saile.

Soone after there arriued 4. ships of the Estates of *Holland*, of the which the *Seignior Opda & Henszbruch*



1602.

was Admirall, lying then sicke at *Portsmouth* in England, in whose absence and by his appointment, *John Adrianssen Cant*, commanded in quality of vice admirall: the Captaines of the three others were *Garbrandt Iohanss Stahl*, *Heinric Hartman* and *Garbrandt Ianssen* of *Enchuyssen*, who (having hard this shooting) had put themselves to Sea towards France. In the ende they discovered the galleys, and seeing them to bend their course towards the coast of England, they turned their prowes against them, and so did Captaine *Bredgate*, of whom we haue spoken, all these together chased them vntill they came right against *Douer* where they ouer tooke them and played furiously vpon them with their Canon, breaking some of the Chaines whereunto their slaues were tyed, whereof a good many leaped ouer board, and some recouered the land; but for that it was darke, and the Sea was calme neere the shoare, they escaped for that time. A while after the Moone began to shine, when as they might discerne the 6. galleys row before the aboute the cape of *Douer*, bending presently towards the *Goeyng* (the which is a very dangerous banke called by the English *Goodwin Sands*) & a good gale of wind rising, they hoised as much saile as they could wel beare to chase the galleis; they being come almost right against *Grauelin*, there comes happily against them from the coast of *Flanders*, a man of war of the States called the *Mackerell*, whereof *Gerard Olie* was Captaine, who charged the galley *Saint Philip*, and slue 60. men, yet she got of his handes, and hoised her saile to flie, the viceadmirall seeing this, with his shippe called the *Moone*, ranne withall his force betwixt the great mast and the poupe of *Saint Phillip* so as he brake an Anchor



chor and some Yron worke of his shippe, and carried away with him the hinder part of the galley, and the helme, and brake their mast, making two Canon shot at them in the galley being charged with peeces of olde Yron and small shotte, so as the owers, bankes, armes and legs flew into the ayre, & presently the galley began to sinke: then *Iacob Pieterßen Mol* strooke with his shippe against the maine mast and the galley sunke: yet there were many saued, Captaine *Garbrandt Ianssen of Enchuyssen*, seeing the Captaine and the principall of the galley, about some twenty of them in their boate, seeking to saue themselves hee sent forth his boate and caused them to be brought aborde of him, else they had beene all drowned: then Captaine *Garbrand Ianssen Sahl* first of all strooke the galley called *Aurora* or the morning, where *Pedro Collado* was Captaine, and brake fve or fixe owers with the hinder part of it, and beate downe one of their mastes, making some shot into her but without any great effect, then the vice-admirall tooke her betwixt the mast and the poupe, and there with brake halfe the Galion of his owne shippe, and cut of all the hinder part of her, overthrowing the helme into the Sea which was of fixe peeces, therupō, *Heinrich Hartman* of *Rotterdam* strook betwixt the maine-mast and the prow, and with that blow the galley sunke; there were about 40. persons saued: So foure of these galleys were lost, the other foure were pursued so swiftly as two of them were broken vpon the coast neere *Newport*, and another neere vnto *Dunkerke*, the eight wherein *Spignola* was, saued herselfe with great difficulty in *Calais*, where the slaues were freed, and went whether they pleased, and

The Galley S. Philip sunke.

The Galley called *Aurora* sunke.



1602. *Spignola* with his gentlemen and others whom he could saue, went to the Arch-duke to *Bruxelles*. There were carried prisoners into *Holland*, of souldiers, slaues, and other persons that were taken vp in the Sea about 180. liberty was giuen to the slaues with apparrell and some siluer, to goe into their Countries, or whether they pleased.

To returne now to our chiefe discourse, the Arch-dukes men seeing that their battery vpon the gollet succeeded not as they expected, and that the ships went in and out thereby; they made a certaine worke, which they called a float, which was as it were a great and large placher of wood, the which might swim vpon the water, it was armed with defences, and fit to plant Canon thereon, the which they thought the Water would holde vp, and not carrie it away nor breake it: this they brought vnto the Gollet, but the waues of the Sea brake it, and so this inuention proued fruitlesse as the rest.

We haue before spoken of the discontentment of the Arch-dukes souldiers for their pay, for the which in the end they mutined and retyred to *Hoochstraten*, and had intelligence with *Conte Maurice* for their preservation, making the whole Country, (euen vnto the gates of *Andwerp*) to contribute for their liuing and entertainment, & this caused the Arch-duke to make a proclamation against them; whereof you shall haue here a copie with the answer of the said mutiners, to serue for the history as followeth.

The



The Arch-dukes.

1602.

**A**S we had caused our armie to ioyne with an intent to succor the towne of *Graue*, the which is besieged by the enemy, & wheras the souldiers that are within it defend themselves so valiantly & resolutely as they deserue great praise; being now going to that end in person, wee haue beene informed that some souldiers of our saide armie which was neere vnto the enemies Campe, (vnder colour that they would mutine, to recouer that which falsely they pretend to be due vnto them) haue wickedly forsaken and abandoned their colours, and (after many attempts vpon sundry places,) haue in the end surprised the Castle of *Hoochstraten*, by treacherous and wicked meanes, hauing giuen many vehement presumptions, that they holde correspondencie and haue intelligence with our enemies, and meane to imploy them. A thing which is prohibited and against all reason and Iustice, & which neuer any other souldiers haue committed: but contrariwise such as haue beene in mutinie, when as the enemy hath besieged any place of ours, or that we had need of men for any expedition, they came forth of those places into the which they were retyred to serue vs willingly and readily.

A proclamation & proscription against the mutiners.

And for that the chiefe actors of this treason and wickednes be men to whom there is little due, for that some are new come, and others were of the mutinies of *Diest*, *Vuert* and *Karpen*, where they had their accumpst & reckoning, & were paid whatsoeuer was due vnto them within a short time, being men accustomed



1602. to inuent alterations to seaze vpon the contribution money, without seruing of vs, hauing induced, deceiued and forced the rest to commit this treason, whereby the execution is hindred of succouring their brothers & companions besieged, & other courses which we might take against our enemye. forcing vs to turne our armes against them, as against our domesticall enemies, and more preiudiciall, for that thereby the enemye is the more fortified. And for that this acte is strange, odious, foule and of bad consequence, it deserues to be punished exemplarily. For this cause desiring to set an order for the benefit of the publike, and the good of our vassals and subiects, we ordaine and command all Souldiers and persons of their company which are in the said castell of *Hoochstraten*, or shall ioyne there, or in any other place, vnder coulour of alteration or mutinie, that within three dayes after the publication hereof, they retorne vnto their Ensignes and coulours, or present themselves before the gouernour of *Liere* or of *Herantals*, to the end they may send them presently to their Ensignes, where they may remaine quietly and peaceably, as if this mutinie had not chanced; and we giue them our word and faith, that neither now nor at any time hereafter they shall be punished, nor reprehended for this fact, although they were the cheefe motiues, but shall be intreated with much loue and affection, and will endeuour to giue them full satisfaction, as to men whom we desire to gratefie and reward. And in case they shall refuse to obey, the said three daies being past, as wel they which are now there present, as they that ioyne with them, we declare them henceforth rebels, traitors and wicked men,



men, which haue committed high treason *In primo* 1602.  
*capite*. And as such we condemne them to death, their  
 goods confiscate, the which we doe presently make  
 forfeit and vnited vnto our treasor: and we giue liber-  
 tie to all men of what estate and condition soeuer  
 they be, freely (and without incurring of any punish-  
 ment) to kill the sayd mutiniers or any of them, al-  
 though it were sodenly, or in what manner and sort  
 they can: and whosoever shall kill them, there shall  
 be giuen vnto them for euery one of their heads ten  
 Crownes: and if it be of any one that hath beene  
 an ordinary officer a hundred Crownes, and of those  
 whom they call of their councell, the Sargeant  
 Maior and Gouvernour of the Horse two hundred  
 Crownes, and for the Electo five hundred Crownes:  
 and if they which shall kill them be any of them, we  
 pardon them and giue them the said summes. And  
 we expresly command all Iudges of our Armies, E-  
 states and Signeories, that they seaze by Inuenta-  
 rie, vpon all the goods moouable or immouable,  
 which the said mutiners, or any one of them shall haue,  
 and the apparrell or other things of their wiues and  
 children, and that the sayd goods be put into the  
 hands of the depositor of the armie, and be sent  
 with a true and formall certificate vnto the Super-  
 intendent of the mylitarie Iustice of the armie, to the  
 ende he may vnite them to our treasor. Wherevnto  
 we doe presently condemne them, commanding all  
 persons, that haue money or any other thing of the  
 said mutiners in their hands, or of their wiues or chil-  
 dren, by exchange, in pawne, in guard, or by what  
 meanes soeuer, that they doe not deliuer it but make



1602. it knowne vnto vs, to the end it may be seized on, as hath beene sayd, vpon paine of confiscation and losse of all their goods that shall conceale them, and an arbitrarie punishment. And for the foulness of the fact and bad consequence thereof, for other Princes to whom the like may chance in their armies, this being left vnpunished: We therefore require and beseech the Emperour and King of *Spaine*, our Lords and Brothers, and all other Kings, Princes, and Potentates, into what part or place soeuer the sayd mutiners shall come, or shall haue any goods, that they will cause them to be apprehended and taken, and sent vnto vs, and their goods to be safely kept, sending vs a certificate in forme aforesayd, being ready to doe the like in our Countries and Signouries at your requests, whensoever you shall desire it. And we doe expressely forbid the wiues and children of the sayd mutiners, to goe into any place where they may be, or shall be, nor to treat or to conferre with them eyther by worde or writing, during the sayd mutinie vpon paine of death. And that euery one may strippe them and take them without any punishment, if they goe vnto them, or if there bee any suspition that they meane to goe to their sayd Fathers and Husbands. We will also that within three dayes they depart our Countries, and that they returne not without our especiall licence, vpon the like paine. We command also that no man within our countries or without, that shall be there vnder colour of marchandise, victualers, or seruants, or in any other sort whatsoever: shall serue, assist, or giue victuals, munition, or any other thing to the  
sayd



sayd mutiners, to their seruants, Horses, or to any one that shall belong vnto them, although it be for money, vpon paine of death, and other pecuniarie punishments, according to the will of our Iudges, and the qualitie of the offence and person, and also they that finde them may kill them without any offence *In Flagranti*. And that out of the Muster bookes of the Armie, be drawne the names, surnames, markes and places, where the sayd mutiners were borne, and thole of their fathers. And being necessarie to make it publikely knowne, let information be made, so as it may plainly appeare that they are condemned, and that the sayd mutiners are proclaimed in our court, and in the places where they were bred or borne, as well in our countries, as in those of the Emperour, the Catholike King, and other Princes our friends and confederates, for banished, infamous, treacherous, and base men, which haue committed high treason, *In primo casu*: And that moreouer the punishments ordeined against such by lawe, may be executed vpon them, their children and descendents. By the which we holde them and declare them from this day condemned. And to him that shall be the meanes to dissolue this mutinie, and to deliuer into our hands the culpable, wee pardon him, and offer to giue him a very honourable rewarde: and the like to all those that shall assist him and giue him aide, although they were of the same mutiners and chiefe authors and officers therof. And to the end our proclamation and proscription may be kept and inuiolably obserued, and may come to the knowledge of all men, as well generall of the Horse, Commanders of men



1602. at armes, Maister of our artillery, Clonels, Maisters of the Campe, Gouvernours, heads of troupes, Captaines and officers entertained, souldiers and all other martial men, of what quality, condition, preheminance or nation soeuer they be, as also our other vassalles and subiects; we commaund that it be publicly proclaimed & be giuen in an authentike forme to the Licentiat *Jean Frias*, of his maiesties counsell superintendent of martiall causes in these partes, to the end he may cause it to be obserued, kept and fully executed, and may giue it to the Auditor generall, and other officers and persons whom it doth concerne: to the ende that all Iudges of Townes and villages may giue him notice of what shall succeed, and he aduertise vs, that we may prouide and decree what shall be needfull for the due execution thereof: and that also another formall copy be giuen vnto Maister *John Richardot* Knight, president of our priuie Counsel, & Counsellor of our Counsell of Estate, that for as much as shall concerne him, he may cause it to be obserued from point to point, as hath bin decreed by vs, & cōmandement giuen to the other ministers and Iustices of our Countries to see it accomplished: In token whereof we haue caused this present proclamation to be made, & set our seale vnto it, made at *Diest* the 15. of September, 1602.

*Signed Albert,*

*and vnderneath.*

*By the appointment of their  
highnesses.*

*and signed I. de Mancicidor.*

*The*



*The answer of the Squadron, Electo,*  
and Counsell of men of Warre retired  
into Hoochstraten.

**I**F proscriptions and threates may stand for payment, the *Squadron, Electo* & Counsell of souldiers retired into *Hoochstraten*, may soone make ready their quitances & send them to your highnesses, confessing that they are well and duly satisfied of all arrerages : but for that this kinde of payment neither feedes the belly, nor couers the backe ; and that in the meane time they (which for so many yeares haue hazarded their goods and liues without pay or reward, & as it were for Gods sake, to maintaine your highnesses in their estates) might be in danger (for want of other paiment) to die of hunger & misery. It is reasonable that the said *Squadron, Electo* and Counsell should make knowne vnto all the world the lies and horrible cruelties wherewith the said proscription is filled, that the equity of their cause may be knowne thereby, and that euery one may iudge if their Highnesses haue reason to thunder thus out in choller against them, things which should rather terrifie women and children then men.

Choller makes their Highnesses to say (we terme it choller, for truth can giue no such testimony) that they had caused their armie to assemble to succor the towne of *Graue*, then besieged by the enemy, what meanes this? was the Towne of *Graue* besieged at *Tilmont* or at *Leeubs*, was it not besieged aboue a moneth after? how could their highnesses succor the Towne of *Graue* at *Tilmont* so long before it was besieged? he ads with



1602. the like ground ( *And going my selfe in person to put this desseigne in execution* ) what is hee amongst vs, or or of all the rest, that did euer see him in the armie, when as Prince *Maurice* would come to visite vs, charging vs vpon our owne dunghill, beeing followed by them which two yeares before had entertained their Highnesses so roughly neere vnto *Newport*. The world knowes they sometimes busie themselues at *Bruxelles* and sometimes at *Gand*, to giue order to their affaires, that their persons may bee no more subiect to such dangers : we confesse notwithstanding that his Highnesse after the Towne of *Graue* was lost, came vnto the Campe, not that there was any neede of his presence; for hee came but to whett his armes against his friendes and faithfull subiectes, seeing that he had found his enemies weapons too sharpe, and his owne too much blunted in *Flanders*, to cut the knot of so strong a bond; if we say true or no, let them of *Delmonds & Venlo* witnes. It is said with the like truth, that at what time his Highnes prepared to succor the Towne of *Graue*, we vnder coulour of a mutinie did abandon our coulours. The art of Arithmatike or numbring should not be practised by giddy braines; choller is an enemy to the memory: but if a good friend seeks to supply the defect of anothers memory, he merits reward; If for such a benefit we deserue a recompence, it is in your Highnesse to acknowledge it, and to speake the trueth, the memory whereof is fresh yet to all the world, as well to our friends as enemies: but that the one is blinded with the darke mists of passion, vntil their giddie spirits be lightened by the truth: we say then that we haue employed our selues for their Highnesses



nesses seruice without regard of the extreame necessi- 1602.  
tie and misery whereunto we were brought for want  
of money, so long as the Admirall of *Arragon*, who  
was our commander ( and not your Highnesse ) was  
camped before the Towne of *Grane*, neither did we be-  
ginne to seeke any meanes for our pay, before the ar-  
mie was farre retyred from the Towne, and that the  
saide Admirall of *Arragon* had no intent to attempt  
any thing, eyther for the reliefe of the Towne, or a-  
gainst the armie of Prince *Maurice*. This was ap-  
parant when as the siege of *Grobbendoncq* Gouver-  
nour of *Bolduc*, ( after that hee had laboured long in  
vaine, propounding all the reasons hee could deuise to  
induce his Highnesse to seaze vppon the Towne of  
*Hanestain*, and by that meanes cut of the victualles  
from Prince *Maurice* his armie ( the onely meanes to  
frustrate his desseigne ) in the end he retired himselfe  
with much discontentment without doing anye  
thing. Then wee beganne to imbrace the pursute of  
our iust cause. If all they that haue taken this course  
shall be helde for traitors and rebelles, there is not any  
one that serues their Highnesses which can bee free  
from this blame: for who hath euer beene payed  
vsing the contrarie course. Their Highnesses name  
*Diest*, *Vueert* and *Carpen*, places which will yeeld testi-  
mony of their saying, the memory is yet fresh of that  
which lately happened there.

It is said also that there is little or nothing at all due  
vnto vs, & that we do falsely challenge that which we  
demand: beeing men that are newly come from Italy  
and other places: or that a little before had beene fully  
satisfied at *Diest*, *Vueert* and *Carpen*, if this bee true



1602. or no, the accoumpts will shew it, and if the summe of three Millions of Liuers be smal with their Highnesses, yet is it great for vs. But admit the summe be small as their Highnesses say, it is then more easie for them to finde then a greater, and they should not for a small matter suffer vs to be reduced to this extremitie. As for treaties and correspondencies which we haue with the enemies of your Highnesses, we finde it strange that they should hold it contrarie to reason and all lawes, seeing that in their proscription, they confesse that it hath beene to maintaine our selues with them. For when as we see their Highnesses armes turned against vs as domesticall enemies, instead of giuing vs hearing in our iust complaints: was it not time (being reasonable men) to doe that which brute Beasts without reason doe teach vs, who with all their force and power oppose themselves against the violence of such as would oppresse them. Our actions then are not without ground or reason, but are rather grounded vpon reason it selfe, and vpon the generall law, necessitie being not subiect to any law, yea vpon the law of nature, which hath giuen this instinct to all creatures, to forget nothing that may serue for their preservation.

It is a lamentable thing, that they which for so manie yeares haue ventured their liues, and powred out their blouds so willingly for the seruice of their Highnesses, should be now brought to holde their liues as it were in fee of their enemies, and that contrarywise they seeke all meanes on their Highnesses part, to roote them out, depriuing them of their liues, wiues, children, victuals, and friends, as it appears more  
amply



amply in the said proscription. His Highnesses knowes well the example of *Dauid*, who retired to *Achis* King of the *Philistins*, his capitall enemy, when he was forced to flie before the face of *Saul* his Lord. It may please his Highnesse to let the *Serenissime Infanta* vnderstand these reasons, and not to thinke it strange if that we being Souldiers would follow the example of such a man of war as *Dauid*. It is said that these courses were neuer practised by others; wherevnto we will make no other answer, but that all our companions know the contrary. How did they of *Sicbe* behaue themselves? who had their deputies continually at the *Haige*, entring and comming forth of *Breda* at their pleasures, and resting at *Langhestrate* vnder their wings which now imbrace our defence, intreating whole troopes of Prince *Maurices* as friends, suffering them to passe through them without any let. The examples which their Highnesses propound vnto vs of such as haue mutined heretofore, and yet haue abandoned their retreats, and haue offered themselves at need to their Highnesses seruice, are things propounded with little consideration: for since that we retired our selues into this place, their Highnesses neuer required any thing of vs as they did of the rest: what reason then haue they to complaine of vs in this case? But if they had sent vnto these others a Herauld at Armes, to signifie vnto them such a proscription as ours, it is to be thought they would not haue left the places they then held, but vpon good termes, neither would they haue shewed themselves so zealous to their Highnesses seruice. It were



1602.

also to be desired for their honour and reputation, that this great zeale and ready obedience of the mutiners had beene delayed a while, for that being too rash, it hath beene more preiudiciall then profitable to their Highnesse, when as ( without respect of their Highnesse worde) they did so villanously breake it in the behalfe of them of *Suaescheuobre* neere to *Ostend*, the which cost that day the liues of a great number of our companions: notwithstanding if their Highnesse finde herein any acte of obedience, as it seemes, seeing they exalt them so much for that respect, they are freed from that blame. They will make vs beleeue, that wee are men accustomed to make mutinies. We will receiue this reproche in part of paiment of our debt with the rest: for of late yeares such as haue carried armes for your seruices, haue receiued no other paiment: But what bruite is there among the people? euery man saith openly that your Highnesse haue brought in this custome, that the Souldiers being paide in this sort without siluer, the cheere in court may be the better. And in truth when there is speech of any exploite of warre, those which holde places seized, doe willingly leaue them and come and offer themselues to your seruice, being full of zeale and obedience. This cannot be called mutining but rather wintring: for, for these many yeares all your men of warre haue learned to winter in this sorte: Euen as your Highnesse did change your Ecclesiasticall estate into a secular, we did much reioyce, thinking that your Highnesse after that you had beene Cardinall, Arch-bishop, and cheefe of the whole



whole Inquisition of Spaine , would not impose 1602.  
any stricter rule vnto your Souldiers, then that which  
your Highnesse might read so often in the Bible,  
which is , *Content your selues with your paye* : But it  
seemes (to your great preiudice) that you haue for-  
gotten it : And there is no man can dreame where  
your Highnesse hath found out that Canon , by the  
which you will begin the practise of a lawe which  
is not yet established: that they must content them-  
selues without pay.

We did alwayes beleeeue that the Ecclesiasticall  
lawes had beene the strictest , as comming from  
God , and regarding mens consciences : but we finde  
our selues short of our reckoning . As for the money  
of contribution , your Highnesse must knowe what  
becomes of it , and it is a ridiculous thing euen for  
the peasants to say that we receiue it : The trueth is  
that to liue we goe vpon your lands ; what should we  
else doe ? your Highnesses giues vs nothing , and  
Souldiers are no Camelions to liue by the ayre : euen  
so by lawe the creditor hath an action on the deb-  
ters goods : but for all that , your Highnesses ordi-  
narie contributions are not diminished . Vnder cor-  
rection, that Secretarie merites to be dismissed from  
your Highnesses seruice , that in your names hath not  
beene ashamed to pack vp together so many palpable  
lies in so little writing: for that which hath beene so of-  
ten practised, should not be held for strange: that which  
is grounded vpon good reason and the common  
lawe of nature , is neither infamous nor dishonest.  
And as for the consequence it cannot be so bad, see-  
ing that the great seruices done with so great zeale



1602.

and obedience by our companions, and the which we haue not yet refused, are so highly praised by your highnes; If it were lawfull for vs to say some thing in your eare, we would thinke to hit the marke, which is, that some haue aduertised vs from good part, that your highnesses grow so extraordinarily bitter against vs, and more then against the rest that haue gone before vs, somewhat to pacifie the people; seeing that of so manye woundes which haue beene receiued since some yeares, they could neuer finde meanes to cure one, the which is credible, seeing your highnesses make no difficulty to holde vs for companions with them which were besieged in the Towne of *Graue*, and which haue wonne so much honour, and esteeme for their good deuoir, which makes vs to holde many things set downe in your proscription, somewhat tollerable, and to be inserted onely *Pro forma*: It is said that we must returne within three dayes to our coulors, or else your highnesses doe proclaime vs traitors and rebelles, &c. Condemned to die and our goods confiscate, &c, To condemne them to die that haue no will to die, and that haue meanes not onely to defend themselves, but also offend them that would assaile them, were very absurde: and your highnesses may well thinke, that we hope to imploy our armes so well, as the tolleration which you haue giuen to kill vs in what sort soeuer, shall not let you nor your substerutes see as few as may be of our heades, for the which you shall not need to paie ten, fifty or a hundred Crownes promised by your prescription, according to the quality of our persons, to them that shall acquite themselves of this charge.

Lnc

As



As for that which is saide of our goods, mouable & immouable; your highnesses know wel what mouable or immouable goods such poore souldiers halfe dead with hunger can haue; our mouable goods cannot be made *Mobiles* but by our selues, which be our armes, & we may also call them our immouable goods for them that would attempt to charge them: daring wel affirme that euen of his highnes, himselfe they would be found too heauy and immouable, if he were posselt with this desire: and if there be any other mouable goodes found among vs, we doe freely make offer of them to such as will fetch them: and as for money, apparrell, and other things belonging to our wiues and children, the registers of your highnesse armie shall neede no clarke to inroule them: if you haue no other reuenues and meanes to feed so many hungry bellies, it is to bee feared that within few dayes your highnesses will be brought to haue as little money and cloathes as we had with our wiues and children, when as necessity did force vs to assemble in this place to finde some meanes to feed and cloath our selues: for wee may saye, that we were then in a manner like vnto the Indians which goe naked, which nakednesse by reason of the great colde in these partes is not very tollerable. Neither your Highnesses nor my Lords your brothers, the Emperour nor King of Spaine, shall profit much by our cloathes, nor our goods lying vnder their iurisdickions: and as for the defence made vnto our wiues and children to come vnto vs vpon paine of death, we take it for a great fauour which your highnesses haue done on vs, not desiring in the estate wherein wee are to haue our heads much trou-



160 2. bled with our wiues: It were a ridiculous spectacle that after they had taken awaye our wiues and childrens cloathes; and they confiscate to your Highnesse, to condemne them to depart the Countrie within three dayes; the conduct of this naked troupe would serue for a recompence to some one of your Court, who by the shew of so strange a sight, might easily draw some good summe of money from the people being curious of nouelties. But doe your Highnesses thinke to furnish vs by the defence which you haue made to bring vs any victualles? doe you thinke it is possible for your subiectes to obey you in this respect? seeing it is not in your power to warrant them against vs? for if you desire to maintaine the contentes of your proscriptions causing vs to be slaine by your subiectes, It sh all bee easie for vs alwayes to reuenge our selues of this cruelty by reciprocall actions.

It is saide in your proscription that your Highnesse desires it should be executed against our children and successors: we doe not thinke that your Highnesse (being an Arch-bishoppe and reading the Bible) hath euer found the like, but contrarywise haue often heard (although they were souldiers) that God doth neuer punish the children for the fathers offence, vnlesse they were likewise culpable. And if we had committed all the offences in the world (the which is not so) by what diuinity hath your Highnesse learned that you should proceede so against innocents? Is it for a matter of consequence? What punishment then will their Highnesses reserue for themselves and their successors seeing they are the cause of all this.

All Kings and Princes shall haue cause to looke in-  
to



to your Highnesse carriage, and to learne how they speede that make warr e without money; which is the synowest thereof. 1602.

Those which in times past haue woone reputation by the Warres, haue followed contrarie courses *Cyrus, Alexander, Scipio, Iulius Caesar*, and manye others did neuer impouerish their souldiers, but contrariwise haue inriched them; they vsed no proscriptions nor menaces or threatens against them, in case of discontent: but haue sought to pacifie them by mildnesse and curtesie, and if it were needefull to suffer with them, they did neuer counterfett: what did *Alexander* when in a dry and barren Country, they brought him a Helmet full of water, hee was better pleased to cast it on the ground then to drinke, seeing that it was no more but for himselfe, and that his Armie had great need, shewing by this example that he desired to fare no better then his souldiers.

Your Highnesses, haue ten, a hundred, yea five hundred Crownes to buy our heades, but you cannot finde ten, a hundred, nor five hundred farthings to maintaine our bodies and heartes in your faithfull seruices; you haue founde the meanes to exceede manye great Princes, yea the Emperour *Charles* the fift of most famous and happy memory, the Emperour now raigning and the King of Spaine, in all kindes of state and pompe, and yet yee cannot finde any meanes to paye your poore souldiers (the onely foundation of your estate) but by proscriptions and threatens. *Alexander* the great seeing the *Macedonians* (whom hee had greatly inriched)



1602. disobedient, and nothing fauouring his victories, sought to pacifie them by mildnesse and curtesie, and it succeeded well. Your Highnesses contrarywise after you had rashly and miserably thrust headlong the best part of your most resolute Souldiers and Captaines, and seeing their affaires brought to a lamentable extremitie, you sought to ruine them quite, paying them with proscriptions and threats, and promising recompences to them that should kill them. *Iulius Caesar* seeing on a time a discontentment among his olde Souldiers, which desired to retire home to their houses, refusing to goe into *Affrike* about an expedition, he omitted nothing that might pacifie them by amiable means, honouring them with the name of *Quirites*, that is to say, Good and olde fellow Cittizens; and by this meanes he satisfied them. Your Highnesse may learne hereby how a Prince ought to carry himselfe to his Souldiers, who by his fault are become miserable.

Besides all the points conteined in this goodly proscription, they will charge vs to be the cause of the desolation of the countrie of *Luxembourg*, because we did not hinder it; it is well knowne that before we were taken for traitors and rebels, your Highnesse armes were turned against vs, euery man was allowed to kill vs, & our heads were set at ten crownes a peece.

How can all this accorde well together? It had beene farre better your Highnesse had imployed your forces to preserve *Luxembourg*, and not to suffer so goodly a Prouince to be so miserably wasted. Seeing then the foulness of your proceedings, and the bad consequence which other Princes may gather thereby, in committing the like course against their men of warre.



The Squadron Electo and Councell, beseech all 1602.  
Princes and common weales to make vse of this example, and to take heede least abusing thus their good and faithfull souldiars, which are the sinewes of their estates, they drawe not the like mischief vpon them, which threatens dayly more and more to ruine their highnesses.

The Arch-duke after this proscription of the mutiners, went to besiege them at *Hoochstraten*, where he prest them very hardly, although they were very well fortified with three ditches and ramparts, where they made good resistance, and *Mounsier de Rosne* sonne was flaine there, yet the mutiners seeing in what case they were, prouided for their safety, and compounded with Prince *Maurice*, who came to succour them, causing the Arch-dukes men to raise the siege, deliuering by this meanes the Castle of *Hoochstraten* into his excellencies hands, and he put the saide mutiners in garri-son into the towne of *Graue*. They were full six thousand men, horse and foot.

They of *Ostend* left not to molest the Arch-dukes men dayly. And we may say that this siege is a stoppe for his forces, the which for these three yeares space haue taken cold before this heape of Sande, the which hath already cost the Prouince of *Flanders* neere three Millions of goulde, besides that which the King of *Spaine*, and the Arch-duke, haue imployed for their parts, and likewise what the estates of the vnited Provinces haue contributed, all which is not of lesse value, the which may well be sayd a wonder of this age.

The first of Ianuary. 1603. they sent one an other 1603.  
new yeeres gifts with Canon and musket shott.



1603.

In February the float whereof hath bene spoken, (which had beene set vpon the Gollet to stoppe the passage of the shippes) was broken by a tempest and a strong North northeast winde, and did no more trouble the shippes going in nor out.

250000.  
bullets  
shot a-  
gainst Ost-  
end.

From the beginning of the siege vnto the first of March 1603, there were shott against the towne 250000. bullets of iron, euery one waying betwixt 36. and 50. poundes, and a number of Canon spoyled: as soone as the Canoniers did cease neuer so little, the *Infanta* (the Arch-dukes wife) lying at *Newport*, sent in post to commande them to shoote continually.

The  
towne spent  
a 100000.  
shot.

The besieged lost no time, for they shott a 100000. Canon shott against the armie, and often sent their canons into *Zeland* to be chaunged or new cast.

Number  
of the dead  
on either  
side.

They reckoned of dead men, as well through necessitie as by the Canon in the Arche-dukes campe 18000. men and of them of the towne 6000. or 7000. amongst the which there were of cyther side men of marke chiefe commaunders in warre, and Captaines.

The 12. of March Captaine *Granszfelo* had his leg shott off with a Canon being on the west rauclin and died vpon the place.

The 16. day there entred three shippes by the newe Hauen, the which were shott through with the Canon.

The 17. the enemy planted 6. demie Culuerins and a whole one vpon a plat-forme called the swallowes neast.

The 20. of March they began to shoot from thence and among others, hurt 9. men with one shott: they made



made 375. shott that day.

1603.

There entred 17. shippes into the towne by the gollet, which were much annoyed with the Canon, there were three men slaine and two shippes sunke.

The 24. of March in the night there entred 22. saile into the Hauen, whereof the one was laden with horses.

The 26. day the enemie planted three peeces at the Goller, vpon a new plat-forme.

The 29. there entred three barkes in the day time, whereof the one was laden with Turfes, at whom the enemie made about 68. shott, and pierced that with Turfes in cleuen places, the which sunke in the new hauen.

The 30. of March there went 10. saile out of the Hauen, whereof the enemy tooke foure with their barkes.

The 31. of March they parled together, as well to redeeme the shippes, as to holde quarter (that is to say Truce) by land, and not by sea, but their followed nothing.

The 2. of Aprill a corporall of the gouernours compagnie was shot, for that he had slaine his sargent in the night, he was called *Hans Huhm*, & was a *Brabançon*.

The 4. of Aprill 2. Frenchmen of the Towne being in gard on the west square, fled vnto the enemies to the crowes neast: the same day the aduenturers of the Towne brought in one of the enemies prisoner, who sayde that they of the Towne laboured continually at a new platforme, and that euery man which laied the bauins had two dooble ducates for the day and night, and that they which brought the bauins & other stuffe



1603. did get as much: and he said moreouer that he had bin in garde the night before, and that sixe men had beene strooke with one shot.

The 6. of Aprill the besieged made an enterprise to surprise the enemies sentinels on the East side, and to cut the *Corps de garde* in peeces; and as some of their men were vnder the Plat-forme to heare what was done, they were discouered, and presently the alarme giuen throughout all the Campe, the which forced them to retire.

The 7. of Aprill they of the Towne dismounted a demie *Culuerin* which was at *Luybos* vpon the Gollet.

In the night there went forth foure saile, whereof three were nothing hurt, the fourth being shot betwixt winde and water, returned, and soone after went to Sea againe.

The 10. of Aprill three men to whom they had promised a 100. Dollers, brought in a ship which had bene fired, one of them (who was a Canonier) had a *Hargu-buze* shot in the arme.

The same daye a *Culuerin* was planted vpon the Polder.

The 13. of Aprill did blowe a violent South-west winde, so as many olde walles and couerings of houses were blowne downe, & the Church steeple, vnder the ruines whereof a man was slaine, and another had his legges broken; almost all the enemies Gabions vpon the East were ouerthrowne, and their newworke vpon the Gollet was likewise much ruined.

A furious  
assault

In the night the enemy gaue an assault to the towne of al sides, with great forces; vpon the East side they pulled vp aboute a 100. piles at the halfe Moone of the towne,

but



but they were repulſed and forced to retire: vpon the 1603. West ſide they gaue an aſſault to the *Porke-eſpike*, and brought thether two barrells of Pitch and Rozen, but in the end they were repulſt; Captaine *Hanekrots* Lieutenant was ſlaine, and Captaine *Bocke* had a *Hargubuze* ſhott through the body, whereof he died three weekes after.

At the ſame time the enemy gaue an aſſault to the Raelin of the Polder, from the which they were at the firſt repulſt, but they returned with ſuch fury as The Polder taken. they tooke it, and the Polder ſquare, Weſt ſquare and Sout ſquare, and yet there was a demie *Culuerin* with ſome yron peeces vpon the Polder ſquare, which plained their partes well. The put them all in a maner to the ſword, and the next day in the morning they ſlew them in colde blood which had remained: they hanged vp a Canonier and then caſt him downe the Trenches with deriſion: This aſſault continued foure houres.

The 14. of Aprill, about 9. of the clocke at night the beſieged made a ſally vpon the ſquares, from whence they were repulſt and loſt many of their men, and amongſt others Captaine *P. Friſt*, and the Colonel of the *Suiſſes* Lieutenant, an Auncient of the *Suiſſes* & one of the Engliſh: ſo as there were 400. men of the Towne ſlaine, & amongſt them many men of marke and vallour. The enemy loſt a 1000. men with all hope to take the towne by aſſault.

The 16. the beſieged redeemed the Lieutenant Colonel of the *Suiſſes* body for a 100. Dollers, and it was brought into the Towne. The number of the ſlaine.

That day and the daye before there, entred 7. companies of ſouldiers into the Towne, two of *Suiſſes* one



1603. of Denmarke, one of English, two of Sueden, and one of the low Countries. That day the enemy did fortifie himsele on the East side.

The 17. of Aprill, 4. Culuerins were brought to *Ostend*, three Demies and one Minion.

The 18. of Aprill there went a Barke forth whose o-  
wers were broken by the enemy.

The 19. the besieged planted a bastard Culuerin vpon the Bulworke of *Pekel*, and another vpon the Bulworke of the *Polder*, and the third vpon the North-east Raelin.

The 20. they planted another bastard Culuerin vpon the west Port.

The 21. of Aprill, a messenger came to *Ostend* with letters, which did much reioyce the besieged, giuing them to vnderstand that they should be soone releued.

The 22. of Aprill there was a Culuerin planted vpon the *Polder*, to shoote at the swallowes neast.

The 23. the besieged shot three peeeces at the swalloes neast, and dismounted three of the enemies Canons.

The same day one fled from the enemies Campe into the Towne, who gaue intelligence that the Archdukes men had resolved to giue an assault to the halfe moone vpon the East; both by water with barkes, & also by land. they of the towne (to preuent this enterprise,) set aboat in garde neere to the halfe Moone, the which was twise sunke, the garde of the place fell out by lot to Captaine *Scknitt*.

The 24. of Aprill there entred 32. ships into *Ostend* by the new hauen, at whom the enemy shot about 80. Canon shot, and wounded a Mariner to the death:

The



The same day the enemies planted eight Canon vpon 1603. their new battery, and made there about eleuen Canoniers.

The 27. of Aprill there entred eleuen companies into *Ostend*, three of them were of *Zeland* & the rest Scottish & English; there were two slaine in one barke, and a boy had his legs strooke of.

The 28. of Aprill there entred a ship at noone day into the Towne, and at night there went fixe forth: the same daye there was a proclamation throughout the towne, at the sound of the drum, no man vpon paine of death, to fight, quarrell or stricke.

The 2. of May they brought two Canons from *Zeland* into the towne: and the aduenturers tooke two of the enemies prisoners.

The 3. of May a french man of the enemies Campe came and yeelded himselfe into the towne, in the night there entred two Companies of souldiers.

The 5. of May two french men of the towne went to the enemy: at night a barke of the Towne was sunke and two men slaine in another.

The 7. of May there came seuen galleys before *Ostend*, who fought with seuen shippes of warre, but they were beaten and made flie.

The 8. of May Lieutenant *Gesseler* was slaine.

The 10. of May there entred 34. saile into *Ostend* by the Gollet, at whom the enemy discharged 128. canon shot, & sunke fve; one was laden with bullets, another with a Culuerin, & the rest with munition: they of the towne seeking to saue the ship that was laden with bullets, had fve of their men hurt with one shotte, yet in the ende they saued it, as also that which had the Culuerin,



1603. being forced to cast the Culuerin into the water, the other three were presently lost.

The 11. and 12. of May, the souldiers which lay in the Roade, were brought into the Towne, about 30. companies, so as then there full 80 Ensignes in the Towne.

The 13. of May they parled, and there were two prisoners exchanged: at night there was brought 120. barrels of Poulder into the Towne.

The 14. of May, three French men of the Towne fled vnto the enemy.

The 15. there went forth 7. saile at noone day by the new Hauen, two wherof were sunke, one of the which (the maister being hurt in the arme) went vnto the enemies side, the other was quite beaten in peeccs, but al within it were saued: The same day there were three marriners of the Towne slaine by their owne men; and Captaine *Blommert* died, nine of the enemies swamme through the Gollet, to spoile certaine vessels.

The 16. of May there was a truce made on the East side, but not vpon the water, and five prisoners were exchanged: they of the Towne had intelligence that the enemy had some practise to sinke two ships that lay in the Gollet.

The same day, about 60. ships and barks set saile, whereof there was but one sunke, in the which there was the baggage of two captaines *Frisons*, & their spoile which was worth much.

The 17. of May, there came a company of *Frisons* into the Towne, and there was Beere also brought in; before a barrell of English Beere was worth twenty foure Liures which is eleuen Germaine Dollers, and that



and that of *Holland*. 20. liures.

1603.

The 19. day, they might discover about 30. saile at Sea, they shot furiously on eyther side: there were two men slaine in the towne, and one souldier that would haue fled to the enemy.

The 20. of May there went in three shippes by the gollet, wherof two were sunke.

The 21. of May in the night the troupes of *Naninck* went forth: and a souldier of *Schleumers* companie was hanged, for that he would haue caused the souldiers to mutine.

The 22. of May there entred 20. shippes by the gollet, whereof three were sunke.

The 23. of May eight shippes entred by the new hauen, whereof two were sunke, one laden with a Culuerin, (the which was saued) the other a merchant and he perished.

The 24. of May there entred 29. shippes by the new hauen whereof two were sunke.

The 25. defences were made by the founde of the dromme, for all marriners or other persons, to make sale of any marchandise before it had line 24. howers in the halles for that they made monopolies, which caused a derth: It was also forbidden to play at Cards, Dice or any other thing, vpon paine of imprisonment, and to fast eight dayes together with bread and water: likewise for men of command not to be drunke being vpon their guard, vpon paine to loose his armes and to be degraded: And there was a promise made of 50. Crownes to him that could take any one dead or a-live that would flye vnto the enemy.

Good orders in Ostend.

That night there went 9. shippes out of the towne

Z

with-



1603. without any harme.

The 26. of May the besieged receiued 100000. pounde waight of Poulder, whereof 40000. for the soldiers, and 60 for the Canon: a sargeant came and yeelded himselfe into the towne, who sayd that the besieged did much anoy the new battery vpon the gollet, and had that day flaine a canonier, and stroke of an others leggs.

The 27. of May at the breake of day, being an easterly winde, a full sea and calme, the generall *Don Frederike spignola* (by the Arche-dukes commaundement, who omitted no opportunity to annoy *Ostend*) parted from *Escluse* with 8. galleis and 4. frigatts well appointed both with slaues and marriners, and in them were 2500. musketers and small shott; they shewed themselves at the west of the ditch of *Escluse*, betwixt the bankes called *Francois Pol*, (that is to say) the chiefe or head, and rowed eastward of this ditch. The ships and galleys of the States and of Prince *Maurice*, (being Admirall generall of the sea) seeing that their meaning was to charge them, wayed anchour, and hoysed vp their sailes, taking their course towards the east, although the tide were contrary; & the wind also being so weake as it would not fill their sailes. *Spignolas* galleis hauing the aduantage of wind, tide, and sun, vpon the States fleet; went by the *North* beyond the *Francois Pol* into the *Vuielinghe* or gulfe, turning their prow against the fleet. Being in the *Vuielinghe* about 5. of the clocke, the 8. galleis denided themselves in two foure & foure, with some space betwixt them, & came in this order very furiously with a great cry, & with all their force against the states army, first 2. galleys set vpon the shippe

Combat  
at Sea.



Shippe of *Iost de Mohr* vice-admirall, called the golden Lion; *don Fredirike Spignola* was in one of these galleys, the which had no banderolle or flag vpon his mast, but only about the Chamber of the captaines lodging; *Mohr* the vice-admirall defended himselfe valiantly and did much indomage his enemies with his great ordinance, so as *Spignola* himselfe was there mortally wounded & died before he could go ashore: foure other galleys went after the shippe of Captaine *Legier Pieterßen* of *Groningh* called the *Segel-hont* or flying-dog; one of them tooke him right vpon the sterne with his spurre or pointe, and made him retyer; at the same time the gunner of the dogg set fier to a peece, the which made such a spoyle of the soldiers in the galley, as it seemed a Cart had passed from one end to the other: The *Hollandoise* or black galley wherein *Iacob Michielson* was Captaine, did fight with the other two galleys; this skirmish hauing continued a while, two of the galleys which were nere vnto the shipe of *Legier Pieterßen*, forsooke him, and went against the galley of *Zeland* called the Flight, in the which *Cornelius Ianssen* of *Gorchū* was captaine, who played his part as well as the rest, & without doubt had wone the honor, if an accident of fier had not chanced in his galley; The 2. other galleys did in like sort leaue *Legiers* shipe, & rowed against the *Hollandoise* or blacke galley: One of them was vice-admiral to *Spignola* & had a bāderol vpon her mast, these 4. galleys had inough to do with the *Hollōdoise*, who defended her selfe so valietly, as notwithstanding that these 4. had grappeled with her to draw her into *Escluse*, yet were they forced to leaue her after along fight. The galley of *Holland* being thus forsaken by them that had

*Spignola*  
 slaine.



1603. assailed her, went against them that were in fight with the vice admirall *Iost de Mohr*. An other shippe wher- of *Criin Henrihes* of *Zierc zee* called the *Alte-hont* or the old dogge, although he were not charged, yet did he much harme to *Spignolas* Galleies; he was among the rest, & did flanke them shooting furiously vpon the enemies galleyes, which were in fight with the vize-admirall and the black galley. There was such a slaughter on euery side, but especially in *Spignolas* galleies, as euen a hart of Flint would haue bin moued to pity: neyther of them shewed any base cowardise, they were all so attentiuie man to man, with the Canon, Muskets, halfe pikes, swords, and other armes, to shoote, strike and anoy an other, without any care to auoide the enemies blowes, as it was a horrible thing to see: in the end *Spignolas* men fainted, and fled to *Escluse* in great disorder, carrying backe all their gallies, being fauoured by the neerenes of the retreat. According to the letters written from diuers parts, there were slaine on the Arch-dukes side; the Generall *Frederik Spignola* with about 800. men; and there were some hundreds hurt on the States side; There were some 36. slaine, and amongst them Captaine *Iacob Michels* and his Lieutenant: The Vize-admirall *Iost de Mohr*, and Captaine *Legier Pietersen* with some 60. others which were hurt in the Vize-admirall and the galley of *Zeland*, there were in either of them about 18. Englishmen of the gar- rison which is at *Flesingue* for the King of England, who serued very well, there were 8. slaine and 15. hurt which are comprehended in the number of the dead and hurt. In this combat *Iost de Mohr* the Vize-admi- rall commaunded, instead of the siegnur *William Van*

*Haulteyn*

The nom-  
ber of the  
dead.



*Halteyn* Lieftenant Admirall to the Prince *Maurice*: 1603.  
which lieutenant (hearing the Canon shot) parted presently from *de le lingue*, with 5. ships of war and one frigate, to come to the succor of his men, before the ditch of *Escluse*; but the combat was ended, & the enemies retired when he arrived. Beholde what passed then with the galleys of *Spignela*, wherein is verified that which the royal Prophet *David* saith in the 16. & 34. Psalmes, that victories come not from the force and power of man, but from the grace, succor and assistance of Almighty God.

The 28. May, *Monfieur du Fort* went out of *Ostend* with part of the French men: at night there went forth two great ships, whereof the enemies tooke one.

The 29. of May two souldiers of the Towne meaning to flie vnto the enemy, one of them was slaine; two ships went forth whereof one of them was sunke, and fell neere vnto the enemies battery: the Pilot saved himselfe, there were 19. souldiers of *Ghislell* which were taken, and as some say were hanged.

The 2. of Iune the Leapers or aduenturers of the Towne brought in four prisoners, and amongst them one of the enemies aduenturers.

In the night a little boat past ouer the dike, to surprise the enemies Sentinell: the same night the enemy aduanced neerer vnto the towne vpon the west square.

The 3. of Iune they of the Towne made a sally, in the which Captaine *Hanikrot* was hurt in the cheeke, arme and legge.

The 4. day at night there entred 20. Marchantes ships, whereof three were sunke.

The same night they of the Towne made a sally vpon



1603.

A salie of  
1000. men.

on *Luysbos* with a 1000. men, and wonne the Platforme and the enemies trench turning some of their owne Canon against them; they cloyed two, and cut in peeces the *Corps de garde*, Canoniers, and other officers of the artillery, whom they found there: of their parts they lost the lieutenant to *Conte Ernest* of *Nassau*, the first lieutenant of *Haufzman*, & the Baron of *Sancy* a frenchmā, *Gronestein* Colonel of the *Frisons* was hurt in the legge with many others, and in the end they of the Towne were forced to retire.

They buried their dead men together: the simple souldiers as well of the Towne as of the enemies were buried in the downes, & the men of commaundement in the Towne.

The 8. of Iune they brought 100. barrells of Powder into the Towne.

The 9. day there went 5. ensignes of French out of the Towne: three souldiers fled out of the Towne to the enemy, and in the night there entred 44. ships into the Towne, whereof two were sunke. About the same time Lieutenant *Bitter* died.

The 11. of Iune 5. saile went out of the Towne by the new Hauen, whereof one (in the which were Frenchmen) was sunke, and some of them lost.

The same day the bowels of the Barron of *Sancy* were honorably enterred at *Ostend*, and his body imbalmed and sent into *France*.

That night there were two barkes sunke, in the one were artificiall fire-workes, and in the other victualles for Captaine *Elias*.

The 12. of Iune at night they of the Towne set fire on the West square the which burnt all night: the day follow;



following they discovered 8. Canoniers which they had not seene before. 1603.

The 13. of Iune there were 13. saile went out of the Towne; the same daye before noone Auncient Long died, who had both his legges strooke of with a Canon.

The 14. day there entred two companies into Ostend, the same day the enemy beganne to batter from the Poulder square, the halfe Moones of the Towne, that is, the halfe Moone of *Sednezden*, that of *Slimmer*, and the *Bec-as* or folly of the East, the which is a bowe shoote into the Country, vnder the halfe Moone of *Slimmer*, to the which the night following they gaue an assault. The Governour of *Ostend* fearing that if the enemy should become Maister of this place, he would build a fort, which might greatly preiudice them of the Towne, for that it would take from them the meanes to transport their stufte, and also the enemye might then cast a bridge vpon the Gullet, without any let or hindrance, and by that meanes goe from one Campe vnto another in lesse then halfe an houre: where as now they must haue aboue fixe: hee resolued with the Counsell of warre to prouide for it as well as hee might possibly.

The enemyes passing by night at *Bec-as* vppon a bridge with Ladders and other instrumentes, they were presentlye receaued by ten or twelue Musketiers, who shotte at them giuing the alarme by that meanes, and so aranged themselues presently with their troupes which doe attend the enemy; which entred almost at the same instant with the, crying, *amassa*,



1603. *amassa, guadagnato guadagnato*: but beeing furiously charged by them of the towne they retyred faster then they entred.

If they had charged home to the halfe Moones, they had beene receiued in the like sort, for they were very well manned and garded, in the morning they found many flaine and a peece of the enemies bridge broken.

The 17. of Iune at night there went forth 6. ships, and some prisoners were exchanged on either side.

The 18. there went forth 4. ships.

The 19. one ship went forth which receiued 17. Cannon shot.

The 21. of Iune there went forth 40. saile whereof fixe were sunke.

The 22. they brought a hundred barrells of Powder into the Towne.

The 24. of Iune there entred 4. companies of soldiers into the Towne, and fixe saile in the day time, whereof three were sunke and one Marriuer flaine.

The 25. there entred 5. ships in the day time without any harme.

The 26. of Iune, there entred 12. more in the daye time, and 9. went forth without any hurt. There entred a frigate in the which there were twenty foure persons hurt for that they wonderfully prest in her.

The 27. of Iune Colonel Bruges went forth.

The 28. day there came fire-workes into the towne.

The 5. of Iuly part of the ships entred with al kindes of fruites and hearbes without any losse, and also with store of Powder, and for that it was the day of the besieging of that place, it was celebrated, and all the Ca-

non



non of the Towne shot of: In the night Captaine *Ad-1603*  
*dam van lieft* was slaine, being without the halfe moone  
of the Polder; his bowells were interred in the Towne,  
and bis body was carried to *Dordrecht*.

The 8. of Iuly two loopehooles at *Luisbos* were bea-  
ren downe, towards the sea; at night a strong northerly  
winde cast a ship vpon the east shore.

The 9. of Iuly there went forth three fisher boats.

The 11. of Iuly there entred eight sayle by the new  
Hauen; the night before there went forth 30. where  
of one was sunke, but the barks did succor it and  
brought it into the roade, from whence it sayled to-  
wards *Flesingue*. The same day *Bort* Lieutenant to  
*Geniel* was slaine, whose body was caried to *Scoonho-*  
*uen*, and his bowells were buried at *Ostend*.

The 12. of Iuly there went forth two shippes wher-  
of one was sunke: and in the morning there entred 5.

The 13. of Iuly early in the morning, *Colonel Dorp*  
(who had been gouernour) went out of *Ostend*; and at  
the same time the *seigneur de la Nort* (who had cōman-  
ded there before) came in his place, with 4. companies  
of *Zelanders*.

The 15. of Iuly a soldier of the enemies campe came  
and yeelded himselfe into the Towne.

The 17. Captaine *Calwart* was slaine neere vnto the  
halfe Monne of *Geniet*, his body was carried out of the  
Towne.

The 19. of Iuly there went 20. saile out of the towne  
wherof two were sunke, in the one was the baggage of  
Captaine *Smith*, & in the other the companie of *Colo-*  
*nel Dorp* in the which 5. soldiers were slaine at one shot,  
and many were drowned and miserable burnt, the fier



1603. hauing taken the Poulder.

The 21. there went forth 6. ships with a barke of the Towne full of souldiers.

In the night the besieged shott from the West Bulwarke to the South-square with a demie Culuerin, the which was sette on fier and burnt all the couering,

The 22. of Iuly at night the besieged likewise set fier vpon *Laysbos*, the which consumed all the bauins and wood therof, & all the loope-holes, there was a great fier in the midst therof, & the enemy did what he could to quench it, but it was in vaine.

The 23. of Iuly the besieged planted gabions without the halfe Moone of the *Polder*, thinking to raise vp an other halfe Moone, but the ground was to wet: that night the lieutenant to Captaine *Kief* named *Brus* was honorably interred.

The 27. of Iuly there entred 40. ships in the day time into *Ostend*, without any more hurt but the losse of 3. or 4. men; some entred by the Gollet, and others by the new hauen; amongst other things there were 3. culuerins in them.

The 28. of Iuly there entred 24. saile more in the day time, among the which there was one marchants ship sunck, the which came against the raelin of the towne the frenchmen ranne to it, wherof there were 5. slaine.

The 28. and 29. there entred three companies of *Frisons*, *Hollanders*, and *Zelanders* into the Towne.

The 30. of Iuly the enemy shotte from the East manie fierie Bullets, stones, and other shott into the Towne: That night Colonell *Lohn* entred into *Ostend* with ten saile.

The



The 31. of Iuly the besieged cast balles of wild fier 1603. vpon the enemies plat-formes, the which was presently quenched because it was so calme: there entred two ships.

The 3. and 4. of August there went 29. saile out of *Ostend*, and in them ten companies of soldiers,

The 5. day there went forth 12. saile more without any hurt.

The 7. of August there entred 28. ships.

The 10. of August there entred 5. fisherboats.

The 11. of August the besieged were all day and night in armes, thinking there would be an assault giuen: the same day they set fier of *Luysbos*, but it was presently quenched.

The 12. day the enemies mustered and changed their Campe, they of the Towne thinking it had beene to some other end stooode in armes: the same day fiue Frenchmen went to the enemy by the West side.

The 15. of August two Frenchmen more fled to the enemy vpon the east side: *Luysbos* was againe set on fier, but soone quenched.

The 17. day two Frenchmen going to yeeld vnto the enemy were stayed and slaine.

The 19. of August there entred two companies of soldiers into the Towne.

The 20. and 21. there entred 7. companies more; the same day they of the towne set fier on a plat-forme, at the which they shot a 150. fiery bullets, it tooke not fier vntill the 136. shotte and continued 3. daies and 3. nights. The same day there entred 9. saile.

The 24. day there entred fiue saile more in the



1603. day time, in the which was a companie of souldiers, with Poulder and Matches: in the night the enemy brought some part of another floate.

The same night there went some shippes out of the Towne, one of them, in the which were 13. sicke persons, and five women, had her helme strooke of: they of the Towne tooke eight prisoners.

The 25. of August, the enemy brought another part of their float, the which was (by a fugitiues saying) of 80. tuns in length, and five fadome thicke.

The same day the five women were restored, after they had bin rauished with all indignities.

Cruelty of  
the enemy.

The 26. of August the enemies hung vp all those sicke men, except one, whome they slue with their swordes, being so weake, as he could not goe vp the ladder.

The last of August the aduenturers returned and brought in one of the enemies horsemen prisoner.

The 2. of September the aduenturers went forth, accompanied with some Marriners, and tooke an auncient, a Corporall, and an Ingenier.

The same day, and the 3. the besieged shot at that which remained of the enemies floate, & did in a manner ruine it quite.

The 5. of September there entred 9. ships.

The 8. of September the besieged demanded a truce of the enemy, who required five dayes respite to consider thereof.

The 19. of September there went forty saile out of *Ostend*, whereof sixe were sunke, and two taken by the enemy: one of them did runne aboue a League along the coast, being laden with stufte of great value; they did



did hang vp the Pilot towards the East: the horseman taken the last of August suffered for it, and was hang-  
ed in *Ostend* for the Pilot. 1603.

The 25. of September they laboured in the new ha-  
uen which was spoiled: There entred 28. saile into the  
towne, three of the which were full of Mariners.

The 28. in the night there entred five saile into the  
Towne, whereof three were sunke.

The 29. of September there went forth five fisher  
boats, & *Colonel Dorth* went forth in a small barke: That  
night they of the Towne were busie in working at the  
dike which was broken.

The last of September, there were three barks and  
three boates taken going to fetch flagges, there were  
two slaine and some taken prisoners.

The 3. of October there entred 18. ships by night in-  
to *Ostend*, and there went forth 31. whereof one was  
sunke, after that the men which werein her had bin sa-  
ued shee ran against *Luysbos*, where the enemies burnt  
her.

The 5. of October there entred 9. ships laden with  
ten Canon and some munition.

The 7. of October in the night there went forth  
32. saile with little harme: that day the besieged shot vp-  
on *Luysbos* and the enemy vpon the Towne, so as there  
were many armes and legges shott off on eyther side,  
and many men slaine, they might see the Poulder  
in the Campe set on fire, which did them much harme.

The 8. of October there went forth 11. saile, and 12.  
entred.

The 10. day there went forth six ships with the mes-  
senger of the Towne, who went into *Holland*.



1603.

The 11. of October, the enemies with one of their Barkes tooke a ship in the day time which was bent for *Flessingue*. They made a *Salve*, euery one of the Musketiers three shot, and euery one of the Hargubuziers two, at the comming of some noble man into the Campe.

The Gouvernour caused the new Hauen to be newly repaired, making it more commodious for the shippes then before.

The sicknesse which had bin great in *Ostend* began now to cease, the Towne being furnished with better Phisitions and Surgions.

The Towne was euery day fortified more & more: About that time there entred 18. Ensignes of souldiers into the Towne.

The 17. of October, in the night there entred 14. saile into the Towne, one was broken at the entrie of the Hauen, and a man had his head strooke off with a Canon.

The 19. there went forth 13. saile.

The same day there appeared without the Towne 13. great Barkes and 4. ships which came from *Escluse*, and it seemed they would cast another floate vpon the Gollet, they of the Towne prepared to receaue them.

The 20. at night they approched with a new floate, which they carried backe presently.

They brought behinde *Laysbos* foure ships and some great Barkes in the which they had placed some slaues of *Escluse*.

The 21. of October there came in 10. shippes at noone day, wherof the enemy tooke one laden with Bauins,



Bauins, and carried it to the West shoare.

1603.

The 22. in the night there went forth ten ships without any harme.

The 23. of October, the enemy brought another floate, the which was very great & thicke, which they carried almost halfe neerer then the first, and more towards the East Rauekin. Presently they opened five loope holes, and shotte furiously at the Bulworke of *Pekel*, so as they of the Towne were presently forced to retire their Canon a little, and at that time they had no other place from whence they might shoothe at this floate, but the Bulworke of *Pekel*.

The twenty sixe of October, the tyde being gone, the enemies thrust a Canon behind their floate, from the which they made foure or five shotte at the East Rauekin, and then when the tide came they presently drew backe their Canon with much toile. They of the Towne had not yet shotte much at it.

In the night the batteries of the Bulworkes of Spaine, of *Pekel*, and of the East Rauekin, were prepared and made ready.

One ende of the floate was vndone, they of the Towne were in good hope to ruine it in verie few dayes, it was so lowe as the least waue past ouer it.

This night there arriued two English Barkes laden with Beere and other prouision.

They of the Towne were much troubled to transport their Canon from one Bulworke vnto another to shoothe at the floate.

The dike vpon the South-side was broken againe,

A a 4

they



1603. they were much troubled to repaire it, although they spared no money.

The 27. of October they might see their enemies labouring at their floate with peeces of wood, & beating in of piles behinde it.

The besieged shot at it with *Grenadoes*, chaines, and stones, meaning to make fise Canoniers more to plant peeces at.

They of *Ostend* had intelligence from diuers places, that the *Marquis Spignola* with his Ingener *Pompee*, had some practise in hand to depriue them of the Gollet, & to take them by assault, but hetherto al their subtill deuises are come to smoake.

The 5. of Nouember there entred 11. saile into the Towne, and the like number went forth without any harme.

The 17. day the enemy brought another float which held from the end of the first floate vnto the banke of the Gollet.

The 20. of Nouember, a strong winde comming from the Sea brake this floate of the 17. of Nouember, already much shaken by the towne Canon, so as there scarce remained any shew of it.

The 25. day they brought yet an other float, which preuailed no better the the rest, but was broken partly with the winde, & partly with their continual shooting from the Towne, so as when the water did rise, their pipes and other vessels parted and went one from another: many beames and other stufte were cast into the Towne, so as this inuention serued them to no purpose.

The same day the enemy cast wilde fire from *Duyf-  
bos*



*bos* to the North east Rauelin, there were 9. souldiers and Marriners flaine in quenching it, and manye hurt, in the ende it was quenched without any more harme. 1603.

The fleet of *Zeland* shewed it selfe the third time before the Towne, hauing still beene put backe with a contrary winde; in the end hauing a faire winde they entred, there were in it some companies of Souldiers *Frisons*, with munition and victuals.

A Turkish slaue came and yeelded himselfe into the Towne, who said that *Spignola* had put slaues into his barke, thinking therewith to annoy *Ostend* much, but hetherto he had done nothing.

The same day there entred 3. ships without any losse.

The 26. & 27. of Nouember the enemy shot some fry bullets but with out any effect.

The 27. the besieged did cast many *Grenadoes* the which did much harme in the enemies approches.

The 23. day the besieged brought a newe peece vpon the North-east Rauelin.

The 30. of Nouember the enemy fired this Rauelin, the which was quenched by the Marriners, to whome was giuen a tun of Beere.

The first of December they fired the same place againe, the which was quenched in the night.

They of the Towne did beat downe a corner of *Luisbos* with the Canon. That night it did freeze hard & was very windie.

The 4. day there entred fixe Fisher-men into the Towne whereof one was sunke, at night they of the Towne receiued 200. barrells of Poulder.

The 5. of Decembertwo Irish men of the enemies



1603. Campe fled into the Towne.

The 6. day, three souldiers of the Towne went vnto the enemy.

The same day there blew a strong North-west winde which carried away a great part of the enemies floate.

The 7. and 8. of December the enemy shotte furiously vpon the Towne Rauelin, and did great harme to it.

The 9. day Captaine *Simon Krynen Rotbol* entred the Towne, the same daye a Barke was sunke in the new hauen, in the which Captaine *Bebery* was: within 4. or 5. dayes there had entred 12. companies into *Ostend*.

They of the Towne tooke a prisoner, who was so confident and resolute, as he would neuer discouer any thing of the Arch-dukes Campe, neither could they learne any newes of him.

The 10. of December some ships would haue come into the Towne, whereof six stucke fast, for that they entred too soone into the hoale, (which is the new hauen) the rest seeing that, put forth to Sea with great danger; being a South-east winde: the enemy shot continually at them, and annoyed them much: the Mariners say for their excuse, that they were forced to set saile hauing both weather & winde contrary: at night the enemy broughr another floate.

The 11. day they of the Towne shot furiously vpon this floate. There were 10. men hurt in Captaine *Peter Wilkens* Barke.

The 12. of December, the enemy brought another floate.

The 13. there entred a ship by day.

The



The 15. there were two Barkes lost, but all that were 1603. within them were saued, at night there went forth some Mariners.

The 16. of December, they parled about the redeeming of prisoners: two came from the South-square to yeeld themselves into the Towne, who said that the enemy would giue an assault with a certaine bridge.

The 17. of December, it was a great tempest with a North-weast winde, the which did much harme on either side.

The 18. of December, there entred 41. ships into *Ostend*, the which were almost all shotte through with the Canon, and yet were they all saued, one onely was funke: & another (beeing laden with victuals) was abandoned by the Pilot, and yet entred into the towne. That day the Gouvernour *Ghistil* arriued at *Ostend*.

The 20. day there was a great tempest with thunder and raine from the Southwest.

The 22. of December there entred 27. saile into *Ostend* in the day time, without any losse, one of *Amsterdam* was the first, falling to her by lot.

The 23. day, the Captaine of the blacke galley arriued with a 150. mariners, & the *Seignier de la North* (which had bin gouernor) went out of the Towne.

The 24. of December, all prisoners Mariners and Marchantes were exchanged one for another, and the truce continued.

The 25. of December, being christmas day, the enemies brought another float, the which was not great; they of the towne shot continually at it day and night, with 8. Canons and could not breake it, being bound very fast



1603.

vnto the first: the enemies laboured there without intermission.

They also brought a floate vpon the West side, and placed it whereas it looked vpon the *Porke-espike* and the false braie, it was farre better then the other, for that the Water is not so large in that place as in the Gollet, but being neerer vnto the Towne, it was more easie to fire.

The 28. of December, there entred five companies of English into *Ostend*.

The 29. day there went forth 24. ships without any harme: and the same day Captaine *Kalb* of *Vtrike* was slaine.

*The Copsy of a Letter written from  
Andwerp the 30. of this moneth, whereby  
you may learne many notable  
particularities.*

**H**ERE we haue had great hope of the taking of *Ostend*, especially when as they thought the Gollet might be cut off, and made vnprofitable for the enemies, but in the ende the Sea hath carried away all the workes: notwithstanding there is yet some hope to preuaile: *Spignola* hath vndertaken it, and doth daily imploy some about the workes. He hath casztered and dismissed about 600. men, as well commanders, Captaines and Sargeants, as commissaries and Treasurers, wherof some had put to accompt to the King, or to the Country, five stiuer for euery Bauin, whereas now they haue them for halfe a stiuer: hee hath also reformed the common souldiers.



The Countie of *Flanders* doth contribute for the entertainment of the army 12000. Flemish Crownes a day, comprehending the munition, forrages, and stufte for buildings and seruices; all to be deducted out of their rates by the other Prouinces, for the terme of six moneths to begin the first of Nouember. They meane to make five forts or plat-formes more before *Ostend*, at the which they labour already. all things are ready to batter the Towne and to giue an assault, with great forces, the army (which hath lodged at *Kempen*) doth now march towards *Ostend*, the assault shall be giuen vpon the first occasion that is offered. They haue promised generally to all soldiers, (the Towne being taken) to pay them all arrerages, and to giue them foure moneths pay more then is their due, with leaue & passport to retire for such as shall demaund it. They make many engins at *Nieuport*, *Bruges*, *Gand*, & other places, and amongst the rest canons of wood, a fadom long, with great bandes of Yron, the which one man may carry for a neede; these they shall charge with nayles with two heads or crooked, and euery peece shal make but one or two shotte at the most, they expect shortly to heare of some great exploits, whatsoeuer shal befall, they haue resolved not to raise the siege nor to abandon the Towne.

Not long since in a sollemne assembly of the Councell at Warre (whereas all the commanders *Colonels* and chiefe Captaines were present) his Highnesse (amongst other questions,) demaunded how long the Prince of Parma had beene before *Andwerp*, and being answered him, about eightene monethes, he saide it was not then eightene yeares, and



1603. when we haue beene so long before *Ostend*, wee shall take it, yea if we should imploy all that is in the King of Spaines power. The speech is, that we shall haue 14. thousand Italians and Spaniardes in the spring, and to that end they labour continually in the munition houses, to make dublets, breeches, cassackes and such like: and you would say that the warre doth but now beginne: You may see hereby, that they spare no cost, nor feare any danger or discommodity, yea they are without feare of death, hoping to inioy this spouse in despight of her.

The last of December at night, eleuen souldiers went forth of the Towne to fire some of the enemies workes, but the Bauins would not take, so as they were presently forced to retire with the losse of foure of them.

1604. The first of Ianuary (according to the custome of warre) they saluted one another with Canon and musket shott and many were slaine,

The 2. of Ianuary 8. shippes went out of *Ostend*, whereof one was sunke, the which ran on ground behind *Luysbos*.

The 3. of Ianuary there went forth 24. saile together without any losse.

The 6. of Ianuary there entred three ships.

The same day seauen Loapers or aduenturers brought a Corporall & two Soldiers into the Towne; by whom they knewe (according to the letter from *Andwerp* of the 30. of December) that within eight dayes the Campe had beene fortified with 50. en-seignes of foote, and seauen Cornets of horse, and that they expected the Arche-duke; so as it semes they haue



haue a desseigne to giue a generall assault, but they 1603.  
of the towne are strong and furnished with all things  
necessary, to defend themselves, and to hold out be-  
sides the succors which are dayly and houerly sent vn-  
to them.

The 9. of Ianuary foure ships went out in the day  
time without any losse.

The 10. of Ianuary an Italian of the Campe, came  
and yeelded himselfe into the Towne, and sayde that  
the enemies had resolved to giue an assault to the  
halfe Moone that is vpon the Goller, the first darke night  
that should come. And to that effect they had built a  
bridge, which they called *Pompees Chariot*, by the name *Pompeis*  
of *Spignolas Ingenieur*. It is made in maner of a Chari- *Chariot.*  
ot with foure wheelles, euery one being 15. foote  
high and six broade, behinde comes the Bridge, sup-  
ported vpon a highe crosse beame, which is at the  
end of the Chariot, the moyty of which Bridge  
that goes before, doth rise and fall as they please,  
by the meanes of two Cables that past by two  
polleys, which are fastened at both endes through  
a Crosse, the Beame whereof as a great Mast, a  
150 footel long, the which stands vpright before the  
chariot, the bridge is 60. paces long, and 16. broad, as  
it is plainly to be seene in the plott of the towne of  
*Ostend*. As for the effect of this engine, the vertue of  
the garrison, and the good happe of the States hath  
turned all into smoke: this fugitiue saith also, that  
the enemy should assaile the towne in foure or fve  
places at once.

The tempest and foule weather had almost ouer-  
throwne the East Rauelin, so as the enemies had



1604. now better meanes to annoy the shippes, going in and out of the Towne: the besieged looked for stufte dayly out of Zeland to repaie it.

The enemy brought yet another floate on the West-side neere to Sand hill, right against the olde Hauen.

They of *Ostend* did writ into *Zeland*. that all went well in the Towne, and that they had no want but of stufte to repayer the breaches which the Sea had made.

Here endes the Germanie discourse, I haue recouered many instructions from diuers places, conteyning the most memorable things that haue passed sincc, at the siege of *Ostend*, as well without as with in, vnto this present, the which I haue added hereunto, to acquaint the reader as well with the intelligences and letters written from *Ostend*, as from other places.

From the 15. of Ianuary to the 19. of February there hath entred at diuers times aboue a 150. saile great and small, with fower Canons, two demyes, and ten companies of souldiers.

The Arch-dukes men make there approches at the South-west, betwixt the Polder and the olde Hauen or platforme. They presse vs most vnder the west raelin; and wee haue 15. companies in guard in the counter-scarfe. They make battery vppon battery, hoping to make a breach: for our partes we double and fortifie our counter-scarfe; we peece six Canoniers vppon the Polder, and ten others which flanke vppon the approches, with foure more in another place. The next night they should plant two small Brasse peeces in the halfe Moone of the Polder, & two others in the Cur-  
tine



tin of the West-Rauelin, with which peeces they shall play and indomage the enemies workes; their approaches are exceeding neere, we doe nothing day & night but shoote *Grenadoes*, firy bullets, and stones at them; yet they cease not to labour continually, so as you would say they are slaues which are at this worke: we doe not thinke but in the day and the night they loose about three hundred men: the place where they presse vs neere, is the halfe Moone at the Polder, and the West Rauelin, we cast *Grenadoes* vnto them with our handes houely. We haue prepared a Barke full of wilde fire, the which at the first occasion we will thrust against their approaches: The composition of this fire is such, as the more they shall striue to quench it, the more vehemently it will burne. God send it good successe. Our double Rauelin shall be soone finished, they doe nothing at the new Hauen. The enemy approacheth neere vpon the gollet, and labors there continually, but that will auaille them little: we remoue our canon frō the west part: our halfe Moone of the Spaniards, is made about like vnto a clothiers tainters wher-on they stretch their cloath, to withstand the force of *Pompees* chariot: This chariot hath beene once tryed, but after they had well obserued it, they carried it backe to the downes.

### *The 10. of March from Ostend.*

**T**He first of this moneth the winde was very high at West Northwest, with a furious tempest, so as our towne hath bin wonderfully indomaged. The tide hath bin so high as many haue bin forced to leaue their



1604.

lodgings and houses. The ancient inhabitants say, that there hath not beene any so great these fortie yeares. This tempest hath continued vnto the fift of this moneth; vpon the East-side, it hath wholly ouer-throwne our Ruelin with the Curtaine, euen vnto the East gate, as also the East-Ruelin which is right before the gate, the enemy shoots there, & doth much harme.

The *Strod-dicke* (that is to say, the Dike made of Strawe, which alwayes keepes the water vnder the Souldiers feete) is broken in diuers places. The halfe Moone of the Spaniards vpon the Gollet is free from harme.

A corner of the counter-scarpe hath beene carried away by the tide.

The enemies *Luesbosch* or *Luyssbos*, hath also beene wonderfully ruined, and there is 100. paces fallen downe to the ground betwixt the two batteries, together with the chiefe batterie at the end of *Luyssbos* towards the Sea shoare, in such sort as the least part thereof is standing, and had not that beene which they had newly made, *Luyssbos* had beene quite carried away with the Souldiers, and whatsoever was vpon it.

The old towne hath had a good share in this wrack, and if the winde had not somewhat abated the third day, all the towne had beene in danger, but the Almighty God by his mercie did prouide for it. A great part of *Sand-hill* was ouer-throwne, but the *Pork-espike* was not toucht. The counter-scarpe hath beene wholly carried away, so as the water cannot be stayed within the towne ditches, and when the tide is gone, they go on drie foote. The workes of the Arch-dukes men vp-

on



on the West-side, and their new approaches betwixt 1604.  
the old Hauen and the West-square, haue beene who-  
lie ruined, except that which they haue newly made  
vnder the halfe Moone of the *Polder* which stands yet.

The 3. day we set fire on their approaches which  
they abandoned.

The 4. they tooke *Becc-as* or the follie of the East  
from vs, but we made them presently to forsake it.

The 5. day the Arch-dukes men made 150. Canon  
shott vpon *Sand-hil*, *Helmant*, *Porke-espike*, and the  
West-rauelin.

The sixt of March our men forsooke *Becc-as*, which  
the cnemie seeing, he presently seized on it, but soone  
after (fearing that we would blowe them vp) they for-  
sooke it againe of themselves. They haue also shott ve-  
hemently this day from the *Polder-square*, *South-*  
*square*, and *West-square*, seeing vs to worke at our  
Canoniers: we haue shott so furiously from the West-  
gate, as they haue beene forced to retire their Canon.  
There haue beene spent aboue 300. Canon-shott on  
both sides; to morrow or the next day we shall batter  
the enemies approaches which are vnder the halfe-  
Moone of the *Polder* with 19. Canons, and shall fire  
them. Euery night when as the water is lowe we are  
continually in armes.

The 14. two *Suisses* of the Arch-dukes Campe came  
and yeelded themselves vnto vs, and said that they had  
receiued no money in seauen weekes: that there was  
great mortalitie in their quarter, and that the Souldiers  
had no courage to come to the assault: but we belecue  
them no more then needs must: we are the next night  
in guard, and the day following.



1604.

God be thanked we are yet strong inough, and haue no need of any thing.

*From Ostend the 24. of March.*

**T**He 15. of this moneth there went forth 36. saile whereof one was sunke.

The 17. there entred 9. saile and 9. peeces of ordinance, as well whole as demy culuerines.

The 18. there entred 42. saile without any harme or losse.

The 21. in the after noone Colonell *Ghistel* our gouernour was slaine with a musket shot.

The same day, two of our Scottishmen went and yeelded to the enemy.

The Gouernour of Ostend slaine.

The 22. they without asked vs if our Gouernour slept still; hauing opened him, they found the bullet had peirced through his heart, and had staid in the left eare, his bowels were interred here, and his bodie imbalmed and sent to *Vtrecht*.

The 23. day one of the Arche-dukes souldiers came and yeelded vnto vs, saying that without doubt within 3. dayes the Arch-duke would giue vs an assault; and that all the preparatiues were ready.

The same day *M. David de Orleans* Ingeneur and chiefe maister of the fortifications within the Towne, and the most renowned in Christendome was hurt, he gaue order for all thinges, and then passed into *Zeland*; but there is good hope of his recovery.

The enemies aduance their approaches much vp. on the West and Southwest, and are already vnder the poynte of the halfe Moone of the Polder; but that



that is no great aduantage, we are strong in men and want no resolution, and haue more prouision then we neede: God be thanked here is no speech of any sickness; since the great tide there haue entred aboue a 100. faile without any losse, withall kindes of commodities and we expect more dayly.

The Colonel *Lohn* hath beene chosen Gouvernour in the place of Colonel *Ghisl*.

## Letters from the Archdukes Campe.

AS for the affaires of the siege of *Ostend* of our side they do nothing, and these three monthes they haue little aduanced: *Pompees* Chariot hath made a great shewe, but there is no likelihood that it shall worke any greater effect then it hath done hetherto. The Tide of the first of March hath been wonderfull terrible, for there hath not been the like seene in the memory of man. It surprised vs in the night, at a little platforme, and carried away all the *Corps de guard*, which were vpon the head of the dike, yea the little Baraque of the *Count Boucquoys*, it ouerthrew three or foure Canons, and forced all the Souldiers of the guard to clime vp, vnlesse they would be drowned: it drowned much of our quarter, and carried away a good part of the watermens: But the hurt it did vnto the Towne was nothing lesse: The entrie of the hauen was all broken; the counterscarfe ruined in many places; *Bruges* Gate quite layed open, the rampere broken in manie places in such sort as manie thou-

*Baraque*  
signifies a  
lodging.



1604.

lands of Canon shotte coulde not haue done more; for seauen or eight daies after, they battered the towne with twenty fve Canons. and it was propounded to giue an assault, and concluded so to doe, but the order was afterwarde changed. They suppe now vpon the side of *Albertus* fort. *Catrisse* Maister of the Campe, and the *Bourgingnons* on the Polder side, are already alodged at the Counterscarfe, they haue but eight foote of earth to pearce: *Catrisse* was shotte through the body with a Musket shotte; and *Monsieur de Torres* hath beene called to commaund in his place where now hee is; the saide *Catrisse* died on Sunday at night, his Sargeant *Maïor* called *Rouville* was slaine the night before: and the day before Captaine *Liestre*, brother in lawe to *Catrisse*, was sore hurt.

I know not what the euent will be: Captaine *L'Enfant* Sargeant Maïor of the *Liegeois* was slaine a little before: *Monsieur de la Malaise* Lieutenant Colonell of the *Liegeois* is hurt: *Monsieur de Torres* escaped faire from a *Grenado* which fell at his fecte. The *Italians* aduaunced to the *Cangrego*, and the *Spaniards* to the *Porke-espike*, so as they haue taken good footing, and hope for a good end, it were happy it might be soone, for the enemy makes himselfe strong. *Monsieur de Ghistell* Gouvernour of the Towne dyed eight dayes since of a Musket shott: he whom the Souldiers haue chosen in his place, hath had his legge shott off within these foure dayes. Beholde the estate of our affaires at this day. The 2. of Aprill 1604.

The Estates of the confederate Prouinces and the Prince



Prince *Maurice*, seeing that the Arch-duke *Albert* continued still his siege before *Ostend*, the which he held straightly begirt by land: And although he prenailed not in his desseignes, which were to reduce it vnder his obedience, sparing neither men, money, munition nor any thing whatsoeuer to that effect: Yet the Estates of the confederate Prouinces, thought it fit to prepare an armie to raise the siege from the saide Towne, or at the least to annoy the Arch-duke in some other place, whereby he might be constraigned to turne head, and to with-draw some part of his forces, and so to cease the dayly alarmes which hee gaue to them of *Ostend*, who had beene besieged three yeares.

1604.  
The resolution of the Estates and of Prince *Maurice*.

To effect this desseigne it was resolved by the saide Estates to staye all shippes and boates fit for that purpose both of *Holland*, *Zeland* and *Frise-land*, to the number of foure thousand saile and more, the which they caused to repaire to *Dordrecht*, *Gorcum*, *Schoonhouen* and other places of *Holland*: the *Rondeuous* being giuen before the Castell of *Ramekins* in *Wallcheren*, the which is one of the Ilandes of *Zeland*. They of *Horne*, *Enchusen*, and *Amsterdam* did furnish 500. saile, it was an admirable thing to see the men of warre and Martiners, which came to *Dordrecht*: for whose seruice the shippes were rigged & made ready, as well for them, as also to carry a number of pipes full of fresh water, with Wagons and horses, sackes to fill with earth, artillery and other necessary munition, so as it was a goodly thing to behold this equipage.

4000. vessels furnish an army.

The 21. of Aprill Prince *Maurice* parted from *Dor-*



1604. *drecht* with 12. or 14. thousand men : amongst the which there were 20. companies of horsemen, and all the aboue named shippes of Warre, with the rest that were in other places : The which being come to an Anchor before the hoale of *Middlebourg*, and along the shoare of *Armude*, there were found aboue three thousand and three hundred ships of warre, without compting all other charges requisite in an armye. At which place his *Excellencie* concluded with the Estates, where they should land in *Flanders*.

The 24. of Aprill the gates of *Armude* were open from nine of the clocke at night vntill three in the morning, where proclamation was made at the sound of the drum, that al souldiers should imbarke presently vpon paine of death, euery one in his owne vessell; the which being done, & the tide being good, al the fleet passed towardes *Flesingue* and *Ramekins*, sailing towardes *Wulpen*, the which is at the mouth of the Hauen of *Escluse*, & hauing a south-east winde they came betwixt *Wulpen* and *Cadsandt*, into the blacke port or hoale, where they landed; the places lying commodiously, but two leagues distant from *Flesingue*, and one from *Escluse*.

The 26. of Aprill, they came to the Ile of *Cadsandt*, where they landed without any opposition or let: Such as were in garde at the blacke Port and other places fled: so as Prince *Maurice* marched towardes the fort of *Hossede*, and hauing taken it, he went towardes that of *Lippinon*, causing the Captaine (who commanded therein) to be summoned to yeeld the place, who made answer that he would first see the Canon before he would yeeld, Prince *Maurice* sent him word, that  
if



if he forced him to make on Canon shot against the place, he would put all within it to the sword, and yet he gaue order to bring two canons, the which as soone as the besieged did see they yeelded. They of the fort of *Estfriet*, being likewise sommoned to yeelde, made no answer but with their Canon, to such as presented themselves before it, but towards night, seeing the Canon planted, they yeelded, leauing their artillery, munition for warre, and victualles in the fort; those which came forth were full sixe hundred men, so as all the Ile of *Cadсанд* and the said forts were now in the possession of Prince *Maurice*: In the meane time the rest of the armie was busie to discharge the ships in the said Iland.

The Arch-duke (hauing intelligence of Prince *Maurice* his descent) sent some troupes from his Campe before *Ostend*, who arriued the 25. and 26. day, and intrenched themselves in a halfe Moone vpon the West side of the Port of *Ecluse*, to stop Prince *Maurice* his passing.

The 27. of Aprill, Prince *Maurice* sent some of his ships, with some souldiers, (being accompanied with the blacke Galley) towards the entry of the hauen of *Ecluse*, to passe his men with shaloupes: But the Arch-dukes men beeing to the number of a thousand horse and three thousand foote (according to the report of some prisoners) which then were incamped at the said entrie, and had some artillery planted euen with the water, gaue them such a welcome as they were forced to retire hauing lost some Marriners, notwithstanding that his *Excellencie* had two batteries on this side the hauen, euery one of six peeces of ordinance.



1604.

The 26. of Aprill Prince *Maurice* did nothing but assure himselfe of the Ile of *Cadſandt* and the Arch-dukes men in their fortifications: his Excellencie caused ſome artillery to be brought euen vnder the Caſtell of the Port of *Eſcluſe*, to annoy the Gallies that lay there, but they drew them higher into the Towne, and then they ſhot little on either ſide.

In the meane time they of *Oſtend* beeing aduertised of the deſcent of Prince *Maurice*, reioyced much, hoping to haue ſome reſt, as indeede they had for a while; but they omitted not to ſhoote more couragiouſly againſt the enemy, with their fire bullets eſpecially againſt a great Bul-worke the which they called *Loucqen Pot*, where the fire tooke, the which the Arch-dukes men ſeing, they drew away their artillery, and ſuffered it to burne and ruine.

The laſt of Aprill, ſundry ſhips went in and out of *Oſtend* by the new Gollet, and yet they ſhotte not at them, notwithstanding that the Mariners were faine to thruſt their veſſelles in and out by maine force, a thing which had not beene long vſed in the Country, ſo as for the preſent, they of *Oſtend* are in hope that the Towne will be hereafter better furniſhed then it hath bin, eſpecially for that they hinder them nothing in their fortifications. Prince *Maurice* hauing effected what he deſired in the Ile of *Cadſandt*, beeing loath to looſe any time, he ſent to diſcouer the moſt comodious places to enter into the firme land of *Flanders*; ſo as the 30. of Aprill, his Excellencie paſt the ſtreame which comes from *Eſcluſe* towardes *Iſandicque*, and hauing transported his armie without any incounter, he preſently tooke the fort of *Coxi*, and the Lieutenant



nant with ten others prisoners; such as would defend themselves were slaine choosng rather to stand vpon their defence. then to saue themselves by flight, some prisoners that were taken saide, that the enemies were in a great terrour, and that they of Escluse did fortifie daylye, setting their Galley slaues to worke, which doe serue them to no other vse in the Towne.

The Arch duke notwithstanding is constrained to disperse his forces, according to the resolution of the Estates: and is forced to deuide them into three. that is, one part before *Ostend*, another towards the Prince *Maurice* & the third against the incursions of the mutiners, the which are 1200. horsemen, accompanied with a thousand fixe hundred Cavaliers of his Excellencies, and a thousand five hundred Musketiers on horsebacke set vpon Coussins, the which were made this Winter in *Holland*.

The Arch-  
duke de-  
uides his  
army into  
three.

His Excellencie making his preparation to besiege the fort of *Isandicque*, changed his resolution, meaning first to force three other forts which are neere to that place.

The of 1. May, he Camped before *Saint Marguerits* fort, where there was spent from noone vntill midnight, with nine Canons, about some hundred shotte, the which did so terrefie them, that although there were at the least two thousand horse and foote, with the peasants, yet they abandoned the place and fled by night; and so did they in like sort of the forts of *Saint Catherine* and *Saint Philip*, although in all the said forts there were three thousand foote & sixteene companies of horse.



1604.

The siege  
of Isandic-  
que.

The 3. of May, his *Excellencie* besieged *Isandicque*, where he intrēched himselfe in such sort round about, as no man could go in nor out, he brought much ordinance vnto it, and commaunded certaine shippes of warre to present themselves by Sea before it, with some Brigandins and shaloupes to stoppe their passage forth by Sea: In the meane time the Arch-dukes men which were vpon the West side of the Hauen of *Escluse* (thinking now to haue a good opportunity to recouer the Ile of *Cadсандt*,) caused many shaloupes to come from *Bruges*, and with some that were at *Escluse*, in the which they imbarked 2000. men; but those which Prince *Maurice* had left in gard in the said Iland, suffered some thousand to land, whom they charged so furiously as they put them in route; most of them were Italians and Spaniardes, who cried *a la barca, a la barca*, labouring to recouer their shaloupes, but as they prest into them, some of them were ouerwhelmed, & a great number were drowned, they could not take aboue 16. or 18. aliue, and 8. shaloupes whereof the prisoners were presented to his *Excellencie*.

Prince  
*Maurice*  
before *Es-*  
*cluse*.

In the end Prince *Maurice* hauing entred into the maine land, he set downe before *Escluse*, sending his horsemen to scoure the Country almost as farre as *Gaunt & Courtray*, who returned with great spoile, so as they of *Flanders* are more oppressed then they were euer, all the burthen of the warre being fallen vpon them. His *Excellencie* hath giuen leaue to many ships to retire themselves, & there comes dayly new troupes to the armie from diuers nations.

The Arch-duke is come to *Gaunt* to dispose of his affaires, and hath placed a great Garison in the Towne:  
They



They of *Bergues upzoone* write, that the mutiners haue 1604.  
surprised the Towne of *Wauere* aboue *Bruxelles*, and  
make their courses into *Haynault*, spoiling the Country  
where they passe, and haue burnt the *Suburbes* of *vil-*  
*nerde* for that they would not paye the contribution  
which they demaunded, the which doth greatly terri-  
fie the pefants, so as the Towne of *Gaunt* and *Bruges*  
are full of Country men, who are fled thether with  
thier wiues children and cattell.

Saterday the eight of May, three souldiers came  
out of the fort of *Isandicque*, and yeelded to his *Ex-*  
*cellencie*; they saide, that the besieged had neede of  
all things and especially of fresh water, and that if the  
Canon once plaied, they would not make any great re-  
sistance.

The ninth of May, Princce *Maurice* sent to sommon  
them by one of his trumpets, whom they slue with *Isandicque*  
a Musket shott; Prince *Maurice* offended at this out-  
ragious acte, sent a drumme to demaund him that had  
committed it, threatning, that if they failed therin, not  
to receiue any one of them to mercie; They sent forth  
two Captaines to make their excuse, saying that they  
knew not who it was had made that shott, finally,  
they deliuered an Italian vnto him, & then it was yeel-  
ded vpon these conditions.

*Isandicque*  
sommoned  
by a trum-  
pet was  
slaine.

First that the besieged should depart the fort with  
their armes, their matches out, and their drummes not  
sounding.

Composi-  
on of the  
fort of *I-*  
*sandicque*.

That they should leaue the Canon and munition of  
warre.

That for foure monethes they should not carry any  
armes in *Flanders* against his *Excellencie*.



1604.

That they should furnish them with ships to carry away their sicke men and hurt with their baggage to the Hauen of *Sas*, which ships they should be bound to send back, & for assurance thereof vntill they were returned, they should leaue two Captaines in hostage.

According to which accord, they departed the 10. of May at fiue of the clock in the afternoone, being in all, about 600. men, *Italians* and *Wallons*.

*Aerdenburg*  
a ruined  
Towne.

The eleuenth of May *P. Maurice* went with 1000. foote and seauen companies of horse before a ruined towne called *Aerdenburg*, betwixt *Gaunt* and *Escluse*, the which is another passage, bordring vpon that coutrie which the Sea hath gained, in the which there was a regiment of *Germaines*, with some troopes of Horse, which had intrenched themselves to stop the passage, but they were as faint harted as the rest, and fled out at the back side into the Marishes, leauing withall a Castell reasonably strong, into the which there was a garrison put of 2000. men, which holds *Escluse* besieged on that side, so *P. Maurice* entred the secōd time into *Flanders*, finding many enemies, but small resistance.

*Dam* a  
Towne in  
*Flanders*.

The 16. of May, the whole armie (that onely excepted which was left for the guard of the Ile of *Cassandt*) being parted from *Isandique*, passed at *Aerdenburg*, taking the way of *Dam*, the which is vpon the riuer that goes from *Bruges* to *Escluse*: vpon the way halfe a league from *Dam*, there is a water (which cannot be easilie waded through, by reason of the mudde) the which hath a little Bridge and a Sluce, vnto the which the tide flowes: here the Arch-dukes men had entrenched themselves, to the number of 4000. horse and foote, vpon so straight a passage, as but two horsemen could



could march in fronte : the fort was reasonably strong, 1604. and sufficient to stay *Prince Maurice* his armie : yet after some resistance they abandoned the place, and retired by *Dam* on the other side of the riuer; they left vpon the place 300. men slaine & hurt, and among the rest there were two Captaines slaine, and three prisoners, two *Italians* and one *Spaniard*, and a Sargent Major sore hurt, there were more taken prisoners then slaine. The same Souldiers being retired (as hath beene said) by *Dam* on the other side of the riuer, made a shew as if they would once againe attend the Prince, and to that end they lodged themselues in a place of more aduantage then that which they had abandoned; they had a great chanell by the which the sea did flow vnto *Bruges*, and with all the riuer & dikes which couered them.

The 18. of May part of the armie hauing bin all night in battaile the Lord of *Chastillon* hauing the point with a part of his regiment, thinking to charge the, he found they had left the place. The same day at night the armie camped before *Escluse*.

The 23. day *S. Georges* forte which is vpon the banke of *Escluse* yeelded.

The 30. day the Arch-dukes mē to the nūber of 4000. foot, & 2000. horse, thinking to put some mē, munition & victuals into *Escluse*, were chargd by *P. Maurice* & put to route, & their victuall & munition taken: there were few slaine, & the number is vncertaine, for that the contry is couered & full of Marishes. The galleis being vnprofitable for the of *Escluse*, they drew forth the slaues, and sent them out with some souldiers, who being incoūtered by *P. Maurice* his troops, were disperfed, about 100. of these slaues being chained 2. & 2. together saued theselues in his *Excellēcies* camp, where they had good



1604. entertainment, and some of them came into *France*.

Assault at  
Ostend the  
5. of Iune.

The 5. of Iune on Whitson-eue, there was a generall assault giuen in three sundry places, the most obstinate that might be: they renued it thrice, and it continued eight houres, the enemies had made certaine Mines, which annoyed them more then the townes-men, hauing blowne them vp too soone; there were 800. men slaine, and 500. hurt of their part, and among the rest, the *Seigneur of Bossempierre*. There were about 100. slaine in the towne, and some hurt.

Bossempierre  
slaine.

An assault  
the 17. of  
Iune.

The 17. of Iune the enemies gaue an other assault the which lasted from two of the clock in the after-noone vntill eight at night, when as the enemy did winne some of the Rauelins of the Polder, at the which they lost but 150. men: and they of the towne some hundred: amongst others there were foure Captaines slaine: And although the Towne Souldiers behaued themselves very well, yet the enemies lodged vpon the Polder rampers very neere the towne, where they did strongly intrench themselves.

There entred at the same time into the towne 17. companies of Souldiers, with munition and victuals by the Collet.

The Arch  
duke com-  
pounds  
with the  
mutiners.

The Arch duke seeing that a part of his forces were drawne away to suppress the insolent courses of the mutiners (to the end that he might fortifie himselfe the more against Prince *Maurice*, who lay before *Escluse*) he sought a meanes to make an agreement with them, the which he effected, conditionally that he should (as he had promised) pay them whatsoeuer was due: that he should remit and discharge them of all such money as they had leuied: that he should forgiue whatsoeuer

was



was past: disanull the proscription which he had made 1604:  
against them; and giue them *Ruremonde* for their assu-  
rance; giuing to euery footman 10. stiuers a day, and  
to euery horsemen 25. vntill they had receiued their full  
pay. The said mutiners yeelded vnto his Highnesse the  
castels of *Hochstraten* and *Carsen*, and to P. *Maurice* the  
Towne of *Graue*, with the 1600. Causaliers, and 1500.  
Musketiers which had ioyned with them, and the said  
mutiners were not bound to serue his Highnesse vntill  
they had receiued their full paiement.

The Reader shall be aduertised that the Arch-duke  
doth presse the towne of *Ostend* very hardly, for that  
Prince *Maurice* is camped before *Escluse*, so as they dai-  
ly make new attempts to take *Ostend*: and they with-  
in the Towne doe all they can to defend it, hauing  
made new retrenchments to that end, whereby we  
may coniecture they cannot be yet forced, yet eyther  
of them doe what they can to take or to defend the  
place: which is the occasion why we end this booke,  
for that euery three dayes they giue new assaults, the  
which would be but a repetition of the like things we  
haue before set downe; and therefore the courteous  
Reader shall content himselfe with this, vntill there  
shall fall out some other memorable thing, the which  
in time we will offer vnto his sight.

Conclusi-  
on & end  
of the  
booke.

Ee

A Con-



1604. *A continuance of the sieges of Ostend*  
and *Escluse*, with a pourtrait of the new  
retrenchments at Ostend.

WE haue heretofore said that Prince *Maurice* had taken the Ile of *Cadfanct*, and set footing into the maine land of *Flanders*, to incampe himselfe before *Escluse*, and to beseege it. Before we proceed any further, we will represent vnto you the scituation of the towne. *Escluse* is a Sea towne lying in the country of *Flanders*, which they call *Flamigante*, three leagues from *Bruges* and fiue from *Middlebourg*, in *Zeland*: In former times it hath beene a good and a riche towne, but through the quarrels and warres it hath had with the *Brugeois*, it hath beene made subiect vnto them, and much impouerished and diminished. It hath a goodly spacious Hauen, capable of 500. ships; the towne is exceeding strong both by Arte and Nature, inuironed of all sides with the Sea, Marishes and drowned land: so as in a maner it is inaccessible. In the beginning of the warres it held for the confederate Prouinces. The Prince of *Parma* besieged it in the yeare 1587. and did batter it with thirty Canons and eight Culuerins, making a breach of two hundred and fiftie paces, where his men gaue seauen assaults, and were valiantly repulsed by them within the towne, who fought for their liues and liberties: In the end succours comming within view of the towne, and being hindred by the valour of the Prince of *Parma*, either to enter, or to do any other exploit importing for their releefe, the besieged after three moneths siege, yeelded vp the towne the 4. of August, vpon honourable conditions. Since which  
time



time *Eſcluse* hath continued vnder the *Spaniſh* gouernment, who haue ſo afflicted them with ſubſidies, garriſons, and ſuch like vexations, as the greateſt part of the Inhabitants haue abandoned it. The King of *Spaine* (by the aduiſe of *Spignola*) made choiſe of this place for the retreate of his galleys, wherof we haue ſpoken before, and euen when as his Excellencie came to incampe before it, there were ſome the which being made vnprofitable by his Excellencies forces, they of the towne drew forth the ſlaues, and ſent them away as vnprofitable mouthes, to ſpare their victuals which are very ſcant. Theſe are they we haue ſeene in *France* ſome moneths ſince, who ſaued themſelues, when as their leaders were put to flight by his Excellencies men. His Excellencies quarter is vpon the North ſide of the towne, whereas there are many Block-houſes and trenches, aſwell againſt the towne as without, to hinder the ſuccours. The ſecond quarter is *Count Williams*, fortified almoſt like vnto his Excellencies. *Count Erneſt* quarter is ſome diſtance from the reſt, vpon the Weſt of the Towne, fortified with Black-houſes, hauing a bridge vpon *Kreck* to go to *Sterdenburg* vpon the South-weſt. In the drowned land there are foure-teen ſhips and ſome Barkes with Block-houſes, whereas the *Seignieur de la Noot* commaunds. His Excellencie hath cauſed ſome batteries to be made, but they haue not yet done any thing. He hopes to haue the towne by famine, the beſieged hauing great want of victuals, and eſpecially of freſh water. His Excellencie makes the Inhabitants of *Flanders* to contribute euen vnto the Gates of *Gaunt*, for the entertainment of his Armie.



1604.

Ostend.

The Arch-duke in the beginning of Iuly went to visit the *Infanta*, and to assure the inhabitants. As for the siege of *Ostend*, the Arch-dukes armie consists of eight or nine thousand foote, and fifteene hundred horse, & euery day there entereth two thousand men in guard into the trenches. the Sea hauing ruined the fortifications of the towne, and especially their counterscarfe, by the breach whereof the water hath runne out of the ditch, so as the Arch-dukes men tooke it, & haue gotten to the foote of the towne rampere. The *Bourguignons* are lodged on the right hand, the *Spaniards* on the left, and the *Italians* in the midst.

A mine at  
Polder  
Bulworke.

The second of Iune the enemy blew vp a mine at Polder Bulworke, the which did little harme to them of the Towne, but buried many of their owne men being salty without: the which did coole the heate of the Arch-dukes men being ready to go to the assault. At the same time being come to handie blows, they of the Towne plaied with their Canon and Muskets vpon them, where there were about fifteene hundred slaine and hurt, and of the Towne forty.

A Sallie

The 16. day, the besieged made a sally, in the which they slue fve or fixe of them which laboured in the mines, and tooke foure or fve prisoners, amongst the which there was one of the chiefe Maisters, and vnder-takers, who saide that the enemy did mine vnder the the West-gate: and that *Spignola* was extreame sicke, whom they held for dead.

*Spignola*  
sicke.

Retrench-  
ments of  
the besie-  
ged.

The besieged seeing themselves thus prest, had long before begunne two retrenchments at the Rampere, (the foote whereof the enemy was lodged) a hundred and fifty paces one from another; their ditches are for-

ty



ty foote broade the which they fill with water by the sluces they haue within the Towne, and which cannot be taken from them; betwixt these two retrenchmēts there is a halfe Moone. The first was made defensiue about mid Iune, and some peeces of Canon planted thereon as also vpon other plat-formes to play vpon the Arch-dukes great battery; the portrait is set downe in the beginning of this discourse.

The 15. day the besieged were in armes all the morning, thinking that the Arch-dukes men had prepared to come vnto an assault, but it was a generall reuew which they made.

The 16. day the enemy blew vp a mine neere vnto the West gate, the which wrought small effect, the besieged laboured to repaire the breach which it had made, and did counter-mine continually. An Italian souldier came and yeelded himselfe into the Towne, who said that there was another mine neere vnto it, which the enemy would blow vp the next day, & giue an assault, the which they did, but they were repulsed with great losse of their men.

There were diuers other mines and assaults, like in a maner to the former, in one of them Captaine *Hamilton* a Scottishman was slaine; *Berendrecht* Gouvernour of *Ostend* was also slaine about the same time. *Colonell vtenhouen* who was sent to succcede him, had a Musket shot through the necke, Captaine *Marquet* doth now commaund there, being sent by his Excellencie. They of the towne had beseeched him to giue them a Gouvernour of the same country, some man of valour & authority. The besieged haue no want of any cōmodities, being refreshed daily with al things necessary from



1604. *Zeland*: The Inhabitants of the Towne are so assured, as many of them haue caused their wiues to returne, being retired for the amazment of the mines.

The besieged forsooke the olde rampere.

The trenchments being finished, the besieged resolved to bandon the olde rampere to spare their men. It is a strang thing & worthy of memory that they haue so long time disputed for a rampere of thirty foote thicke, so much battered, mined, countermined and sapt. The Spaniardes presently zeased vpon the olde rampere.

A Sallie

The 15. of Iuly *Colonell Marquet* Gouvernor of the Towne, caused a sally to be made about eight or nine of the clocke at night, to cloy the enemies Canon, of whom there were many slaine but seeing the whole armie comming vpon them, they retired.

The siege beeing planted before *Escluse*, they of *Ostende*, thinking it would be a cause to make the Archduke to presse them more straightly, to diuert his Excellencie by this meanes from his entriprise, laboured continually in their new retrenchments, making one behinde an other, as you maye see in the portraite, seeking out all inuentions possibly to that end, and to make the same firme, and to keepe it from falling, they haue thought it good, besides the Bauins to mingle hay therewith and to fill sackes

*Spignola*, being recouered of his sicknesse, prepared to batter the retrenchments vpon the end of Iuly.

The besieged are incoraged by the neernes of his Excellencies armie, thinking that they fight in vew therof, to the end that resisting the enemy still, Prince *Maurice* might the better effect his desseigne vpon *Escluse*, which is to force them to yeeld by famine.

*A dis-*



A discourse of that which happened at Ostend since  
the 17. of Iune vnto the end  
of the siege.

1604.

**A**fter the death of Monsieur de Ghistelles gouernor  
of Ostend his successor Colonel Adrian van Lhoon  
was likewise shot, then the cōmand of the towne  
remained in three of the chiefe Captaines, whereof the  
one called Captaine Beerendrecht was slaine, & Moun-  
sieur Vtenhove (another of them) being hurt retired into  
Zeland: about the last of Iune Mounseur Marquet (a  
gentleman of good sufficiencie) was sent for gouernor:  
the Marques Spignola hauing now the absolute charge  
of the whole campe before Ostend, being a man of great  
resolution, dilligent, affable & liberall: rich of himselfe,  
hauing furnished the king of Spaine with great sums of  
mony for the maintenāce of this siege: after that he had  
(about the 17. of Iune) taken Helmont, with the west &  
South-west Bulworks, Sand-hill standing then in great  
danger; the besieged (hauing before hand made new  
Bulworks with other fortifications opposite vnto the,)  
did now begin with all speede to make new retrench-  
ments, in diuers parts of the Towne, so as one part be-  
ing lost, they might haue another retreat, & their last  
refuge was by the hauens mouth, where they had made  
a Blockhouse or reduite inuitoned with the Sea, in  
this worke they vsed the aduice and skill of an English  
Ingeneur called Ralfe Dexter an olde seruitour in those  
Coutries.

Spignola  
generall of  
the Campe  
before Ost-  
end.

In the meane time the besiegers cōtinued ther appro-  
ches & workes towards the Sand-hill & new workes,  
by mines & battery frō their plat-formies, giuing diuers



1604. assaults with aduantage, so as the Arch- duke was in great hope to take *Ostend* before that Prince *Maurice* should be well intrenched before *Sluice*, being now lodged in the towne ditch, which was a hard sandy ground, subiect to sappe and mine, and this was the generall opinion of all his counsell at warre.

P. Maurice  
intrenched  
before  
*Sluice*.

Prince *Maurice* Generall of the armie of the vnited Prouinces, had time inough to intrench himselfe strongly before *Sluice*; yet not so suddenly, but that there entred about 1500. men with some small supply of victuals, at two seuerall times through the marishes. Notwithstanding soone after the towne was so intrenched about, & all the marish grounds ioyned together with bridges in such sort, and in some waters, ships and armed Barks brought in all so strongly fortified, & of so great a compasse, as the works were wonderfull for so short a time.

Prince *Maurice* hauing finished and furnished his outward fortifications with three skonses, he began to make his entrenchments & battery against the towne, causing a marueilous long Bridge to be made to giue an assault ouer the hauen; but hauing intelligence by some that fled out of the Towne, that their victuals within grew scant, hauing aboue 3000. souldiers 1500. galley-slaues, besides the Cittizens to feed, he resolved to famish them, being assured that *Ostend* would hold out. Moreouer he knew that a secret way by the which the Gouvernour *Serrano* did thinke to draw in victuals by night, was cut off by a fort which his Mariners had made, and the wayes vnder water made deeper.

*Sluice* in  
extremity.  
1604.

They of *Escluse* being in great extremitie, made fiers nightly vpon their steeple, craving succours; so as the Arck-duke (seeing *Ostend* to hold out) began to finde his



his owne fault, in that he had not resisted the entrie of P. 1604. *Maurice* with all his forces : he therefore resolved to succor *Sluice*, and yet to keepe *Ostend* still besieged, giuing order to aduance the approaches towards the new retrenchments, the which the Marques *Spignola* was very loth to do ; It is said that he had written into *Spaine*, that he was marching to the reliefe of *Sluice*, with small powre & little hope, and not without danger of the winning of *Ostend*, but he was forced therevnto to satisfie the Arch-dukes humour and obstinacie.

The Arch-duke gathered together all the power he could, and by great promises drew the mutined Souldiers to do him seruice in this action, who came vnto him with a gallant troope of horse and foote; he gathered together also a number of Wagons, and so framed an armie vnder the command of the said Marques *Spignola*, not without great enuy of the *Spaniards* & others, leauing the siege of *Ostend* wel furnished with directiōs & necessaries.

About the end of Iuly the Marques *Spignola* marched with 5000. men towards *Sluice*, he tooke an old towne called *Middlebourg*, and so fought round about to force through the Princes campe, but all in vaine: at length when he had tried all quarters with losse on euery side, he resolved the 17. of August to put his enterprise in execution on the side of *Coxie* which is beyond the Ile of *Cassandt*, hauing some intelligence that that quarter was but weakely guarded.

*Spignola*  
marcheth  
to relecue  
*Sluice*.

Prince *Maurice* being aduertised that the Marques *Spignola* had resolved to make some great attempt vpon the side of *Coxie* by *Cassandt*, holding that quarter the easiest to force, and fittest for his approach to *Sluice*, if he might lodge there : seeing that he was retired the 16. day at night from before his trenches where he had camped,



1604.

hee imagined that he was gone to put his enterprize in execution: he went therefore at night to dispose of all things, if the enemies should present themselves, which was to lodge few men in the two first forts, which he had opinion they would assaile, commanding the Captaines who had the charge thereof, to make some resistance if the enemies came vpon them, and to retire into their trenches as men surpris'd and amazed, drawing them in as neere as they could to his artillarie, which discovered all; he had also lodged 2000. Musketiers neere vnto the, the Lord of *Chastillon*, with six companies of *French*, and Colonel *Veer* with six of *English*, commanding that the artillerie should not play vntill the enemies were come to handie blowes with them, to the end they might drawe on the other troopes that came to second them into the trenches, he lodged his horsemen in such sort as they might set vpon the enemy behinde during the fight, and so disorder them, or to charge the bands of *Spaniards*, *Italians*, or *Wallons*, in their retreat as they pleased. The mutinados to the number of 2000. had the point, who giuing a furious charge before day, forced the first defences, and entred the trench, where they made some resistance in retiring: those which commanded at the Artillerie, seeing them so neere, with great aduantage, tooke the oportunitie to discharge their Canon, without attending those that were to second them, so as his Excellencies horse could not come in time to charge them. The 2000 men which first entred, seeing themselves ill intreated by the Canon and Musket short, and part of them flaine and hurt, they retired in the darke to their other troopes which fled. There were many men lost in this charge. It was written to his Maiestie that there were fourescore men of command flaine, amongst others the Marques

*Spignola*  
repulsed at  
*Sluce.*



ques of *Ranty*, borne of the houses of *Lalain* and *Croy*; 1604.  
*Alfonso Borgias*, who commanded the *Spanish* foot-men;  
*Maintenon* a *French-man*, the rest were maisters of the  
 Campe, Captaines, and some voluntarie Gentlemen.

The next day they of *Sluice* seeing *Spignolas* repulse,  
 and the armie retyred, being no longer able to subsist for  
 the great want of victuals which did consume them,  
 they sent forth two Captaines to his Excellencie to  
 treat of a Capitulation: wherevnto his Excellencie an-  
 swered, that there needed but three words, without any  
 further discourse.

The first; that if they would depart that day, they  
 should goe with their Couloirs flying, Drummes foun-  
 ding, their matches light, Bullet in the mouth, with  
 their armes and baggage, like men of honour and good  
 Souldiers.

If they stayed vntill the next day, they should then  
 depatt with white wands.

But if they temporized vntill the third day, he would  
 not suffer them to carry away any thing but Halters  
 about their necks, knowing they did it through malice,  
 being prest by extreame necessitie, being not bound  
 therevnto in honour, seeing they had no hope of suc-  
 cours, but would glorie in shewing themselves obsti-  
 nate.

The two Captaines being returned into the Towne,  
 made report of the conditions propounded by Prince  
*Maurice*, but they could not resolue to depart that day,  
 but the next day they changed their opinions, and depar-  
 ted with honourable conditions, being about foure thou-  
 sand and two hundred men, almost hunger-starued,  
 for all their bread and victuals were spent: many of the  
 Galley slaues had not toucht any bread in 10. or 12. daies,

*Sluice sur-  
 rendered  
 the 19. of  
 August.*



1604. & did feed vpon grasse, greene leaues, leather, old shoos tenderly sodden, parchement and such like.

The conquest of this strong scituated towne, very fitt for many attemps, with 70. peeces or more of great ordinance, and 10. or 11. Galleys with their furniture, incouraged the vnited Prouinces to thinke vpon some course for the reliefe of *Ostend*, for the effecting wherof they made a general assēbly of the states at *Sluice* in the end of August.

*Spignola* being returned with his forces to the siege of *Ostend*, the Arch-duke placed strong Garisons in *Blankenbourg*, *Dam*, & *Bruges*, fortifying all places that might stop Prince *Maurice* his passage to *Ostend*.

In the meane time they of *Ostende* had diuers and fundrie aduantages against the enemy by sallies and countermines. The 10. of August they made a sally, chased the besiegers frō the olde Bulworkes, seized of their ordinance & cloied it, but in their retreat (some hauing ventured too far) 2. or 3. of their captaines & officers were slaine.

*Spignola*  
returned to  
*Ostend*.

*Spignola* being returned, he prest them more then before, and finding the Spaniardes to flie from al seruices, for the enuy they did beare to him & to the Italiās, he resolved to imploy the Germanes in their steede, and to draw them vnto it by his bounty: hauing therefore made his approaches to Sand-hil by mines and other deuises, he resolved to giue an assault with the Germaine regimentes of the Earles of *Foglia* & *Barlamont*, being for the most part all olde souldiers and of great resolution, who after much resistance tooke Sand-hill, and slue all them that had not retired in time, the which was a great furtherance to obtaine their intent: for this their good seruice *Spignola* bestowed of them out of his owne bounty some forty thousand gilders to drinke, with great thanks and commendation.

*Sandhil* taken by the  
enemy.



In the meane time the assembly of the generall Estates 1604. of the vnited Prouinces of Nether-land, being at *Sluce* to resoluē what was best for them to do for the reliefe of *Ostend*, propounded that this long, bloody, and chargeable defence of *Ostend*, was to haue an entry into the maine land of *Flanders*. thereby to force them to their contributions and to keepe the warre there, that seeing they had now taken the strong towne of *Sluce* the Iland of *Cassadt*, with many forts and skonces, besides the strong fort of *I-sandike* and the ruinated walled Towne of *Ardenburg*, (which they resolued to fortifie and to builde a new) all which contained a great peece of ground in the maine of *Flanders*, whereby they had good meanes to draw all the warres into *Flanders* into the enemies Country, and so force the Country to contribute, 70.80. or 90. thousand gilders monthly, all which being now obtained, they thought it needlesse to be at any further charge. Moreover besides the small likelihood there was to defend it: there was no hope to take all the forts and skonces round about it, without the which the towne would be to them of no moment. And for the great benefit of the hauen to the enemy, they thought, what with their shipping by sea, and their strength of horseme by land in *Flanders*, & their dayly courses to incumber and stop the riuers and passages within the Country, withall they would not dispaire, that when the forts round about should be eyther broken or neglected, to recouer the Towne againe, keeping the dominion of the Sea, which aduantage they pretend aboue their enemies, and that when as the place should be repaired by their enemies against the violence of the Sea, the which now against winter required a great charge of 30. or 40. thousand crownes.

Reasons  
vppon the  
continu-  
ance of the  
siege of *Ost-*  
*end*.

These & such like considerations being propounded,



1604.

They reso-  
lue to  
yeeld it vp.

the estates resolved to leaue the defence with the best and most profitable conditions they could: vnlesse Prince *Maurice* with his maine force would attempt to raise the siege, or else make a shew for the obtaining of more reasonable conditions; but the fortification of *Sluice* and of their other conquests beeing very necessary, to take all meanes from the Archduke to besiege *Sluice* againe; did hinder the same, sauing a little shew made to no effect.

Wherefore the Sand-hill being taken by force in September by the Germanes, as we haue said, and the Marques *Spignola* making his approaches & mines in the olde Towne about the olde Church, by which it was greatly feared that with any great tides or Westerne Windes, the Sea might make some great breach, & be a hindrance to any good composition, Mounseur *de Marquet* the gouernour with his Councell of warre in *Ostend*, knowing the will and pleasure of the Estates of the vnited Prouinces of Netherland their maisters, hauing shipt all the principall ordinance and munition, leauing some for a shew, entred into treaty with the Marques *Spignola* the 8. of September, concluded the 10. day: and they departed the 12. day, after three yeares and ten weekes siege, and that a continued siege without intermission, with fighting & shooting of great ordinance daye and night both from within and without, the like hath not beene scene in any mans remembrance, nor read in any Histories.

*Ostend* sur-  
rendred  
the 12. of  
September  
1604.

The number of shot spent of both sides may hereafter come forth in some relations and likewise of the dead in three yeares space.

It is written that there was found in a Comissaries pocket who was flaine before *Ostend* the seuenth of August diuers writings and remarkeable notes, and amongst the rest a note of the number of the Arch-dukes Campe  
that



*of the siege of Ostend.*

223

that died without of euery degree. As followeth.

1604.

Maisters of the Campe.	7.	Sargents.	4911.
Colonels.	15.	Corporals.	9166.
Sargent Maiors.	29.	Lansepeladoes.	600.
Captaines.	565.	Souldiers.	54663.
Auncients.	322.	Mariners.	611.
Lieutenants.	1116.	Women & children.	119.

*All amount to 72124. persons*

Which number is not so great, considering the time of three yeares, sickenesses, and the colde Winters vpon the Sea coast in so colde a Climate, fighting against the Elements the which in former times hath not beene vsed. There is nothing yet come to light of the number that died within, but it is thought the number is far lesse, both for that they were not so many in the Towne, and had more ease, and were better victualled.

The conditions of the composition were honorable. The Articles. To goe forth by land as many as would, with their Colours flying, Drummes sounding, their Matches light, and Bullets in their mouthes, with foure peeces of Ordinance, and Bullets & Poulder for tenne shotte: and two hundred Wagons to carry away their stufte, besides all the Shippes within the Towne that were laden, and the rest to be laden with their baggage, and housholde stufte, their wiues and children, leauing the rest of the amunition behinde, the chiefe whereof was shipt before, they left about eight peeces some not mounted, others crackt & broken with two or three morters, and some 80. barrells of Poulder, the rest was shipt away or made vsit to vse.



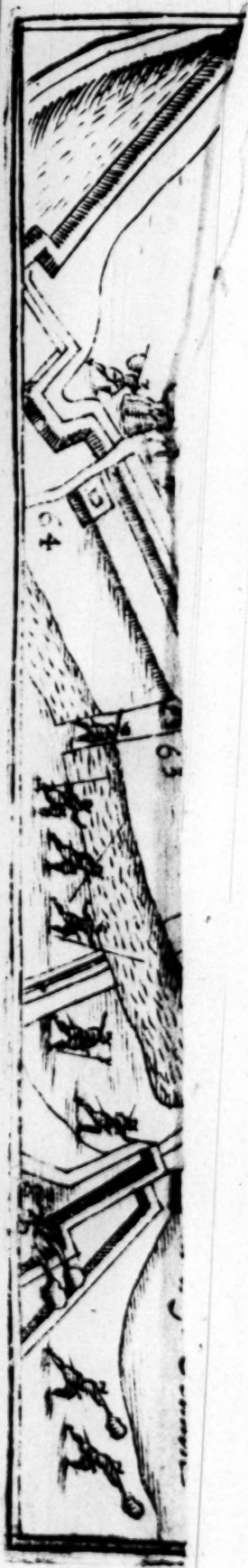
1604. And so there went forth about foure thousand tall Souldiers by the Stronde towards *Blankenbourg*, hauing beene feasted and banketed by their enemies, both within the towne and without in *Spignolas* Tents, and had a conuoy to conduct them, & their ships departed in like sort; they lodged that night at *Blankenbourg* and the next day they came to Prince *Maurice* his campe before *Sluice*, where all the Colonels, Captaines and chiefe men were kindly entertained and welcomed by his excellencie, and the Baylife of *Ostend* was made Baylife of *Sluice*.

There remained no Inhabitants in *Ostend*, only one old man, and a woman or two, but all retired, leauing it as heapes of earth and sand. The Arch-duke came thether with the Infanta to see the place, and from thence they went in pilgrimage to our Lady by *Dunkerke*, to whom they did ascribe the victory. All the countrie people thereabouts were commanded to bring in stufte of wood and Bauins, to repaier the Towne against the Sea.

The Arch-dukes Campe is disolued, and the soldiers are dispersed into the citties & townes of *Flanders*, which were forced to receiue them for garrisons, to withstand the incursions of the garrisons of *Sluice* and *Ardenbourg*, the which his excellency had fortified with many Bulwarkes, leauing there this winter some 7. or 8000. foote, and 2000. horse in garrison, hauing built stables for their horses in *Ardenbourg* and *Isendicke*. Monsieur Vander Noot being made Gouvernour of *Sluice* vnder Cont *Hendrik Fredricke* of *Nassaw*, brother to Prince *Maurice*.

FINIS.





e figure

ich they of the towne

ed 42. in the whole  
ie.

ied the 16. of June,  
whole mapp. 39.

ulworke to the Coun-

June, and an assault

one and kept garde,

Bulworke.

fe where they of the

cutt off and seperated

emie blew up ane sea-

hereon they haue made  
of 71. 72. 73. After-  
ulworke, number 69.  
the enemies Catteyes,  
ay see in the portrait.



4. And so there went forth about foure thousand tall Soldiers by the Stronde towards *Blankenbourg*, hauing beene feasted and banketed by their enemies, both within the towne and without in *Spignolas* Tents, and had a conuoy to conduct them, & their ships departed in like sort; they lodged that night at *Blankenbourg* and the next day they came to Prince *Maurice* his campe before *Sluice*, where all the Colonels, Captaines and chiefe men were kindly entertained and welcomed by his excellencie, and the Baylife of *Ostend* was made Baylife of *Sluice*.

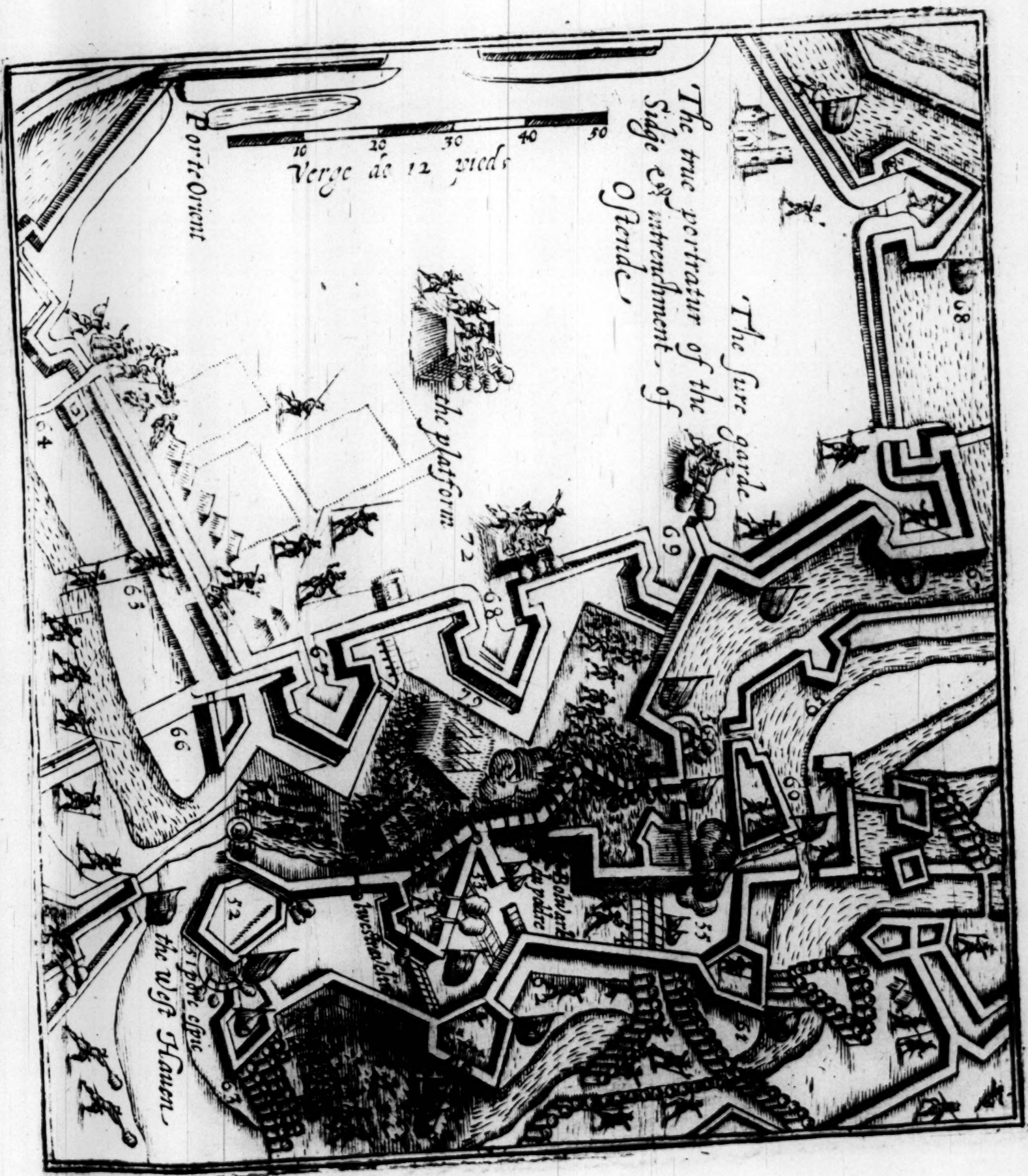
There remained no Inhabitants in *Ostend*, only one old man, and a woman or two, but all retired, leauing it as heapes of earth and sand. The Arch-duke came thether with the Infanta to see the place, and from thence they went in pilgrimage to our Lady by *Dunkerke*, to whom they did ascribe the victory. All the countrie people thereabouts were commanded to bring in stufte of wood and Bauins, to repaier the Towne against the Sea.

The Arch-dukes Campe is disolued, and the soldiers are dispersed into the citties & townes of *Flanders*, which were forced to receiue them for garrisons, to withstand the incursions of the garrisons of *Sluice* and *Ardenbourg*, the which his excellency had fortified with many Bulwarkes, leauing there this winter some 7. or 8000. foote, and 2000. horse in garrison, hauing built stables for their horses in *Ardenbourg* and *Isendicke*. Monsieur Vander Noot being made Gouvernour of *Sluice* vnder Cont *Hendrik Fredricke* of *Nassaw*, brother to Prince *Maurice*.

FINIS.









1604.

And so there  
 diers by the St  
 feasted and ba  
 towne and wit  
 to conduct the  
 lodged that ni  
 came to Princ  
 all the Colone  
 entertained ar  
 Baylife of *Oster*

There remai  
 man, and a w  
 heapes of earl  
 with the Infa  
 went in pilgri  
 they did ascrib  
 abouts were c  
 Bauins, to rep;

The Arch  
 are dispersed i  
 were forced to  
 the incursions  
 the which his  
 warkes, leauin  
 and 2000.h  
 their horl  
 fier Var  
 of



# An Explanation of the figure of the retrenchments of Ostend.

51. *A Halfe Moone before Helmont in the which they of the towne kept garde a long time.*
52. *Helmont cutt off from the Towne marked 42. in the whole carde of the Towne representd in the Historie.*
53. *A Bulworke on the West, where a mine played the 16. of Iune, and the next day an assault was giuen in the whole mapp. 39.*
54. *The Gallery or Corredor from Polder Bulworke to the Counter-scarfe.*
55. *Here a mine was blowen up the second of Iune, and an assault was giuen.*
56. *Here they of the Towne had a halfe Moone and kept garde, where they made a mine.*
57. *The Bulworke of the South-west. 35.*
58. *The Castall, or stable of Kine, the South Bulworke.*
59. *A halfe Moone within the Counter-scarfe where they of the Towne kept garde.*
60. *A halfe Moone taken by the besieged, cutt off and seperated from the towne.*
61. *A Ravelin.*
62. *The West Ravelin*
63. *The Porke-espike, a part whereof theemie blew up and seized on the rest 41.*
64. *A Blocke-house before the North gate.*
65. *A Bridge,*
66. *A Ravelin.*
67. *New Helmont.*
68. *The new Bulworke of the West.*
69. *Sure gardes or vrigandes.*
70. *A Plat-forme upon the market place, whereon they haue made three batteries marked with the numbers of 71. 72. 73. Afterwards it was changed to the new West Bulworke, number 69. the which is of eight peeces, to play upon the enemies Catteyes, and is changed as occasion serues, as you may see in the portrait.*